



ENGLISH POETRY IN THE  
LATER NINETEENTH CENTURY

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

ENCOUNTERS

WILLIAM MORRIS AND HIS POETRY

WITH MARJORIE R. EVANS

SELECTIONS FROM COLERIDGE

# ENGLISH POETRY IN THE LATER NINETEENTH CENTURY

BY

B. IFOR EVANS

PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH LITERATURE IN THE UNIVERSITY OF SHEFFIELD



METHUEN & CO. LTD.  
36 ESSEX STREET W.C.  
LONDON



*First Published in 1933*

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN

TO  
OLIVER ELTON



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE . . . . .	ix
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	xi
CHAPTER I	
DANTE GABRIEL ROSSETTI . . . . .	I
CHAPTER II	
ALGERNON CHARLES SWINBURNE . . . . .	26
CHAPTER III	
CHRISTINA GEORGINA ROSSETTI . . . . .	65
CHAPTER IV	
WILLIAM MORRIS . . . . .	81
CHAPTER V	
MINOR PRE-RAPHAELITE POETS: WILLIAM BELL SCOTT; WILLIAM ALLINGHAM; THOMAS WOOLNER; ARTHUR O'SHAUGHNESSY; JOHN PAYNE; PHILIP BOURKE MARS- TON; WILLIAM SHARP (FIONA MACLEOD) . . . . .	102
CHAPTER VI	
COVENTRY PATMORE AND ALLIED POETS: COVENTRY PAT- MORE; FRANCIS THOMPSON; MRS. ALICE MEYNELL. . . . .	130
CHAPTER VII	
GEORGE MEREDITH. . . . .	162
CHAPTER VIII	
THOMAS HARDY . . . . .	178
CHAPTER IX	
JAMES THOMSON . . . . .	195
CHAPTER X	
ROBERT BRIDGES AND HIS ASSOCIATES: CANON DIXON; MARY COLERIDGE; GERARD MANLEY HOPKINS; DIGBY MACK- WORTH DOLBEN; ROBERT BRIDGES . . . . .	204

# viii      LATER NINETEENTH CENTURY POETRY

## CHAPTER XI

	PAGE
LIGHTER VERSE : AUSTIN DOBSON ; EDMUND GOSSE ; ANDREW LANG. COMIC AND NONSENSE VERSE : EDWARD LEAR ; 'LEWIS CARROLL' ; WILLIAM SCHWENCK GILBERT ; CHARLES STUART CALVERLEY ; JAMES KENNETH STEPHEN . . .	244

## CHAPTER XII

WILLIAM ERNEST HENLEY AND ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON .	265
----------------------------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIII

JOHN DAVIDSON . . . . .	279
-------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIV

OSCAR WILDE . . . . .	301
-----------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XV

ERNEST DOWSON ; LIONEL JOHNSON, AND THE POETRY OF THE EIGHTEEN-NINETIES . . . . .	314
--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XVI

MINOR POETS : GEORGE MACDONALD ; ROBERT BUCHANAN ; DAVID GRAY ; GERALD MASSEY ; ALEXANDER ANDERSON ; JOSEPH SKIPSEY . . . . .	333
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XVII

MINOR POETS AND POETRY (CONTINUED) . . . . .	350
EPILOGUE . . . . .	377
INDEX . . . . .	381

## INTRODUCTION

**I**N the living organism the moment of birth and death can never be precisely traced, and so with poetry no absolute periods emerge; but the death of old ideas and the birth of new forms continue in a perpetual motion. Yet in certain decades the contrast between ascendant and disintegrating schools gains a keener emphasis, and it is then that the values of the new developments can be most easily perceived. Such an instructive juxtaposition of old and new occurs in English poetry during 1850-1860. The present volume isolates the fresh activities which began in that decade, and with them as a point of departure outlines the chronicle of English poetry from 1860 to the close of the century. This introductory note gives, in general perspective, the relation of the poetry of the early nineteenth century to the new forms which emerged in and around 1860.<sup>1</sup>

The years 1821-1834 mark the most melancholy interlude of mortality in the history of English poetry. English romanticism comes to an abrupt end, not through any exhaustion of purposes but by the removal of its poets with calamitous swiftness: Keats, born in the same year as Carlyle, had died of consumption at Rome in 1821; in 1822 Shelley was drowned off Leghorn, and in 1824 Byron succumbed to marsh-fever at Missolonghi; Scott, wearied by the struggle to meet his creditors, died at Abbotsford in 1832; two years later Coleridge, despite the care of the Gillmans, gave up his long and unequal struggle with ill-health. Most of these lives had come to an untimely end; accident, disease, frustrated effort accompany their memory, with the suggestion of high talents still maturing, or of genius struck off at its height. A few figures of the previous age remained, but with all their earlier impulses numbed: Wordsworth, who passed through the horrors in France in 1792 without losing faith in humanity, lived on, petrified, a reactionary and a pensioner from whom 'the breath and finer spirit' of poetry had departed. Sincere and consistent in his new doctrines he was conscious of loneliness; the best he had known had departed, and the troubled days from which great verse had been made. Southey continued in pedestrian

who has put his exceptional knowledge of the poetry of the period at my disposal and has guided my erring steps on a number of occasions. To my wife I am indebted for help on many points and for the preparation of an index.

References and bibliographical matter have been removed from the foot of the page, where they might trouble those who wish to read a clean text, and will be found at the ends of the chapters, where it is hoped that they may be used without inconvenience by such as wish for them.

I have sought, wherever possible, the permission of publishers and executors to quote the passages which I have used from copyright material to illustrate my critical text. I would apologize for any omission, or incomplete reference in the following list : for A. C. Swinburne, to Messrs. Heinemann, Ltd.; Christina Rossetti, to Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd. ; William Morris, to Longmans, Green & Co., Ltd. ; William Allingham, to Longmans, Green & Co., Ltd. ; Fiona Macleod, to Mrs. William Sharp ; Coventry Patmore, to G. Bell & Sons, Ltd. ; Francis Thompson and Mrs. Alice Meynell, to Wilfrid Meynell ; Thomas Hardy, to Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., and to the author's executors ; Robert Bridges and Gerard Manley Hopkins, to the Clarendon Press, Oxford ; Andrew Lang to Messrs. Longmans, Green & Co., Ltd. ; Sir Edmund Gosse, to Messrs. Heinemann, Ltd. ; W. E. Henley, to Messrs. Macmillan & Co., Ltd., and to the author's executors ; for R. L. Stevenson, to Messrs. Chatto & Windus, and to Mr. Lloyd Osbourne ; John Davidson, to John Lane The Bodley Head, Ltd. ; Oscar Wilde, to Messrs. Methuen & Co., Ltd., and to the author's executors ; Ernest Dowson, to John Lane The Bodley Head, Ltd. ; Lionel Johnson, to Messrs. Elkin, Mathews & Marrot, Ltd. ; Stephen Phillips, to John Lane The Bodley Head, Ltd. ; Mary E. Coleridge, to Sir Henry Newbolt for poems from the volume published by Elkin, Mathews & Marrot ; and to Mr. A. E. Housman for permission to quote from his poems. I am indebted to Messrs. George G. Harrap & Co., Ltd., for permission to quote in Chapter IV some sentences from my study of William Morris published by them.

B. I. E.

SHEFFIELD

*January 1933*

## INTRODUCTION

IN the living organism the moment of birth and death can never be precisely traced, and so with poetry no absolute periods emerge; but the death of old ideas and the birth of new forms continue in a perpetual motion. Yet in certain decades the contrast between ascendant and disintegrating schools gains a keener emphasis, and it is then that the values of the new developments can be most easily perceived. Such an instructive juxtaposition of old and new occurs in English poetry during 1850-1860. The present volume isolates the fresh activities which began in that decade, and with them as a point of departure outlines the chronicle of English poetry from 1860 to the close of the century. This introductory note gives, in general perspective, the relation of the poetry of the early nineteenth century to the new forms which emerged in and around 1860.<sup>1</sup>

The years 1821-1834 mark the most melancholy interlude of mortality in the history of English poetry. English romanticism comes to an abrupt end, not through any exhaustion of purposes but by the removal of its poets with calamitous swiftness: Keats, born in the same year as Carlyle, had died of consumption at Rome in 1821; in 1822 Shelley was drowned off Leghorn, and in 1824 Byron succumbed to marsh-fever at Missolonghi; Scott, wearied by the struggle to meet his creditors, died at Abbotsford in 1832; two years later Coleridge, despite the care of the Gillmans, gave up his long and unequal struggle with ill-health. Most of these lives had come to an untimely end; accident, disease, frustrated effort accompany their memory, with the suggestion of high talents still maturing, or of genius struck off at its height. A few figures of the previous age remained, but with all their earlier impulses numbed: Wordsworth, who passed through the horrors in France in 1792 without losing faith in humanity, lived on, petrified, a reactionary and a pensioner from whom 'the breath and finer spirit' of poetry had departed. Sincere and consistent in his new doctrines he was conscious of loneliness; the best he had known had departed, and the troubled days from which great verse had been made. Southey continued in pedestrian



worthiness with a pension from Peel, until 1843; Leigh Hunt, another pensioner, survived his imprisonments and skirmishings in radical journalism, to produce essays and editions of poems, until his long life ended in 1859. By 1830 all that was effective in English romanticism had come to an end.

Nor were the romantic poets fortunate in the reputation that pursued them after death, for during the period 1830-1860 they all endured diverse misrepresentations. The legend of 'cockneyism' clung to Keats even after the publication of his *Life and Letters* by Lord Houghton in 1848. Matthew Arnold, writing in 1880, was expressing an estimate far more appreciative than that of the earlier half of the century when he commented: 'His *Endymion*, as he himself well saw, is a failure, and his *Hyperion*, fine things as it contains, is not a success. But in shorter things, where the matured power of moral interpretation, and the high architectonics which go with complete poetic development, are not required, he is perfect.'<sup>2</sup> Tennyson had shown by 1830 how the early nineteenth century could gather up the technical ingenuity of the 'shorter things', but Keats's aesthetic philosophy and his profound if incomplete interpretation of experience were left for later decades to rediscover. Shelley is scarcely more fortunate. His lyrical skill is recognized, but his wide-ranging power of converting an upstart philosophy into a noble poetic reality is denied him, and once again Matthew Arnold writing in 1888, crystallizes into a single phrase a generous estimate of the stunted impressions of Shelley's work held in the early nineteenth century. 'The man Shelley, in very truth, is not entirely sane, and Shelley's poetry is not entirely sane either. The Shelley of actual life is a vision of beauty and radiance indeed, but availing nothing, effecting nothing. And in poetry, no less than in life, he is a "beautiful and ineffectual angel, beating in the void his luminous wings in vain".'<sup>3</sup> Browning, for a moment in *Pauline*, seemed prepared to see Shelley plain ('Sun-treader, life and light be thine for ever!'), but he withdraws from this early stress of thought into his own philosophical preoccupations. In this nineteenth century depreciation of romantic poetry Byron suffered most of all. The early nineteenth century did not forget him. It extracted from his poetry and his life all that was least memorable, and having idolized these

selected features, grew tired at length of the image that it had created.<sup>4</sup> From the great Byron of *Beppo*, *The Vision of Judgment*, and *Don Juan* it turned with disdain. Matthew Arnold favoured Byron, for had not Byron also in his own day fought the compact majority of British Philistinism? But Arnold contrived to write his long essay on Byron without mentioning *Don Juan*.<sup>5</sup> Nor, as it will appear later, did the later nineteenth century ever rediscover in poetry the intense satiric power of Byron. The Chaucerian frankness, the cascading laughter, the subtle union of pathos and comedy, the roguery and irony of *Don Juan* are lost from one end of the century to the other. This failure to reintroduce into poetry the mature qualities of the Byronic genius is the clearest perspective into the taste of the century,<sup>6</sup> and Byron had already drawn his own conclusion on the contrast between himself and the age which was to follow: 'The truth is, that in these days the grand *primum mobile* of England is *cant*; cant political, cant poetical, cant religious, cant moral.'<sup>7</sup> Equally serious is the early nineteenth century misconception of Coleridge. Over him lay heavily the double condemnation of incoherent speculation and of a life wrecked by opium. He had a group of loyal followers, but in the popular imagination he remained as the poet of a few magnificent but harmless verses, a moment of brightness in a clouded life. His poetical skill entered richly into the form and diction of early nineteenth century poetry, and can be seen as a strong formative influence on Tennyson. Yet these isolated poetic excellencies disguised the thinker, more learned than any man of his age, who had attempted to bring together the broken fragments of thought into a single image of truth. 'My system, if I may venture to give it so fine a name, is the only attempt I know, ever made to reduce all knowledges into harmony. . . . I wish, in short, to connect by a moral *copula* natural history with political history; or, in other words, to make history scientific, and science historical—to take from history its accidentality, and from science its fatalism.'<sup>8</sup> Coleridge in this passage was already defining the central problem of Victorian thought, but only a few alert minds realized his profundity. John Stuart Mill as early as 1838 coupled him and Bentham as 'the two great seminal minds of England in their age',<sup>9</sup> but it has been

left for the present century to shatter completely the legend of Coleridge's indolence, and to establish all that he might have contributed to the Victorian dilemma.<sup>10</sup> Yet even in the period (1830-1850) when he was most misprized his 'seminal' quality was working. His influence on religious thought has been well summarized in the phrase, 'Coleridge was, in fact, the father of the broad-church movement: and he was the godfather of the high-church'.<sup>11</sup> His influence on Newman and on the Oxford Movement has yet to be fully recognized.

The year 1830 is thus a real date in the history of English poetry: romanticism has been submerged or diverted; the old poets are dead, or ineffective; apart from minor writers, such as Beddoes, Darley, Elliott, Wade, and Clare, the field is empty. There is a more distinct break here than at any other period in the century; indeed, the poetry of the later nineteenth century in many of its aspects is the rediscovery in a new form of the romantic tradition which was driven underground between 1824 and 1830. The early nineteenth century from 1830 constructed a new poetry, with Tennyson and Browning emerging as dominant figures. They begin their effective work in the same years, Tennyson with *Poems* (1832) and Browning with *Pauline* (1832); they achieve recognition and gain the major expression of their genius in the same period, Tennyson with *Poems* (1842) and *In Memoriam* (1850), and Browning with *Men and Women* (1855). In their later work, despite *The Idylls* (1859) and *The Ring and the Book* (1868), they may change technically, but they show no important development either poetically or spiritually. At first it is difficult to realize how clearly Tennyson comes to separate his poetic purposes from the romantic movement. His apprenticeship is romantic; frequently even in his later work the *décor* is medieval and up to 1842 he frequently goes questing after the poetic methods and effects of Wordsworth, Keats, and Coleridge. But already in 1842, and more persistently after that date, he narrows his underlying poetic motives to the elucidation of contemporary problems. His purposes are strangely akin to those of Pope in *The Essay on Man* and *The Moral Satires*, with the satiric element eliminated. He is exploiting poetic resources for contemporary controversies and moral discussion, and in a language intelligible to the layman. Unlike Pope, he has

behind him the whole tradition of romantic poetry to colour his work with melody and suggestive phrasing, while a personal urgency of spiritual exploration transfigures his endeavour :

I stretch lame hands of faith, and grope,  
And gather dust and chaff.

Browning is more obviously removed both in motive and technique from the poets who precede him. Despite his references to Keats and Shelley and his Gothic extravagances, he is only incidentally affected by the romantic tradition. If his early blank verse owes something to Shelley, his later verse and his couplets seem all his own, vocabulary, syntax, and rhythm all flung from his own mind. He has obvious Elizabethan contacts, and one is frequently reminded in his work of the metaphysical poets and of the prose of Carlyle, but once his tutelage has passed it would be difficult to attach him in any way to the poetry that immediately preceded him.

Tennyson and Browning devoted themselves to the debate of the century—the attempt to construct a faith that would incorporate personal immortality in a liberal, even personal, interpretation of Christianity. It is here that they approach more closely to Coleridge than to any of the romantic poets ; only Coleridge in his mature period realized that poetry was not the right medium for effecting this discussion. They went further and attempted to consider institutional morality in verse ; they portrayed morbid and abnormal types who were infected with moral indiscipline, and the dilemma of those who remain within a faith and are yet uncertain of its relation to truth. With such themes they explore that compact and insular controversy which dominates the early nineteenth century and penetrates all forms of imaginative literature. Carlyle is the central figure in the discussion which develops later into the debate between the scientists and the representatives of organized religion. As has already been suggested, much of the work of Tennyson and Browning, particularly in their earlier periods, is free from these preoccupations ; to adapt Arnold on Keats, ‘the shorter pieces’ are frequently absolved, but the larger effort of their mature endeavour is directed to these purposes. They employ verse to register their

passage from spiritual uncertainty to individual spiritual security. Browning from the first has a consistent optimism which Tennyson did not always possess, for though he masquerades under different dramatic disguises, it is possible to detect his underlying emphasis on a faith jubilantly held despite difficulties, with personal immortality as a sure but unproven result of a life where evil is the necessary accompaniment of moral growth. He defines his position most clearly in *Christmas-Eve and Easter-Day* (1850), *Saul* (1855), and in the Pope's monologue in *The Ring and the Book*. His security is asserted rather than revealed, and it remains unshaken by the hordes of grotesque figures—Sludge, Guido and the rest—which haunt his imagination. After his marriage with Elizabeth Barrett in 1845 his attitude begins to harden into dogma.

The virtues and limitations of the period 1830–1860 are more absolutely defined in Browning's work than in that of Tennyson. It is true that Tennyson, in the verse of his central period, represented the success and belief in prosperity that lie in all early Victorian thought. He shared particularly the faith in a happy future for England with a somewhat complacent security within well-defined frontiers. He appealed successfully to the traditional virtues of the English people, and he honoured some of their traditional heroes, yet he attempted honestly to face the perplexities which scientific conceptions and changing institutions were developing, nor did he cloister himself in any illusory palace of art, insusceptible to the gradual disintegration around him. With *In Memoriam* (1850) he re-states his faith as he had reviewed it since Arthur Hallam's death in 1833. This poem, published nine years before Darwin's *The Origin of Species*, has within it a summary of evolutionary thought, derived possibly from Chambers's *The Vestiges of Creation* (1844), and attempts to relate this to the Victorian conception of the possibilities of human life. Tennyson states clearly the philosophical scepticism which arises from a material conception of history based on science. He sees Nature, not as a mellowing influence, disciplined by order and harmony, as it had appeared in Wordsworth's poetry, but as a ruthless struggle of type with type in which human history might be a passing incident. This scarified vision of life might have converted Tennyson into a poet of tragic stress, and there are moments

in *In Memoriam* when this seems possible. Instead he withdraws, before the poem has closed, a frightened, huddled figure sheltering behind a faith which he cannot justify. He comes, as Browning had done, to the haven of spiritual security, with a belief in a beneficent Providence and in personal immortality as essential credentials of entry.

Tennyson and Browning continued their work late into the century, but by 1860 their effective purposes had been revealed in their personal solutions of the Victorian controversy. In prose the controversy continued, in Huxley and in Spencer, but in poetry, with some minor exceptions, it exhausts itself by 1860. This indeed is one of the most impressive contrasts between the earlier and later nineteenth century. After 1860 controversy and discussion in poetry ceases : some poets remove from argument into an aesthetic world of their own creation ; others adhere to a tradition of Catholic Christianity which renders argument unnecessary and releases poetry for the exploration of mysticism ; a few attempt out of their recognition of new knowledge to construct a new synthesis of belief. Between Tennyson and Browning and the later nineteenth century there remains, however, a number of notable figures whose work helps to determine the perspective of later nineteenth century verse. Foremost stands Matthew Arnold, the pivotal figure who relates the earlier with the later tradition. For the more the poetry of the nineteenth century is explored, the more does it appear that Arnold gathered into his own perplexity the most varied features of the poetic image of the whole century. Arnold in his long weary years as an inspector of schools saw the ordinary life of England more clearly than any other poet : he knew the harsh, cruel values of those decades, and he saw how industrialism was destroying not only the face of England, but man's very power of perceiving beauty. As a critic he sets himself against this national Philistinism ; and while Tennyson and Browning are occupied with more abstract problems, he makes his audience aware of a society that is closing its ugly doors on the arts. Through him we learn something of that bleak isolation of the artist in a world otherwise occupied, which appears and reappears in later nineteenth century poetry. In his own verse he presents three distinct motives which struggle for supremacy in his mind, and

they are all instructive. First, like Tennyson and Browning, he attempts out of spiritual distress to create a satisfying faith. In prose, he succeeds, but the synthesis contents his intellect only ; his poetry from *Resignation* (1849) is the record of one tortured by the disintegration of all that he would wish to hold secure. Among its many expressions the most poignant is in *Dover Beach* :

The Sea of Faith  
Was once, too, at the full, and round earth's shore  
Lay like the folds of a bright girdle furl'd.  
But now I only hear  
Its melancholy, long, withdrawing roar,  
Retreating, to the breath  
Of the night-wind, down the vast edges drear  
And naked shingles of the world.

Arnold, like Tennyson and Browning, enters 'the valley of intellectual doubt but unlike them he never comes through'.<sup>12</sup> Much of his most memorable verse is thus occupied in exploring a spiritual dilemma which he is impotent to resolve. This first element in Arnold is paralleled in his friend Arthur Hugh Clough (1819-1861),<sup>13</sup> who dwells amid the same perplexities ; but a comparison of their poetry shows how clearly in Arnold this first motive was modified by other susceptibilities. For, opposed to this poetry of spiritual distress, there lies his own critical doctrine reasserted in his essays and given its most formal expression in his preface to *Poems* (1853). Here, more consciously than any other poet of his age, he rejected romanticism, and attempted to restore to poetry the cool, sane qualities of classical narrative, the portrayal of 'excellent actions', such as 'most powerfully appeal to the great primary human affections'.<sup>14</sup> He would detach himself from the decorative excess of the Gothic and equally from the analytical poetry of his own age. Yet the strange anomaly soon appears that Arnold's critical precepts failed to satisfy him emotionally, just as his erection of a religious belief in his prose essays had failed to satisfy him spiritually. It is true that he attempts to evolve a poetry based on his criticism, and *Merope*, *Sohrab and Rustum*, *Balder Dead* are the cold idols of a literary faith to which his whole nature could not respond. More definitely his rejection of *Empedocles on Etna* shows the gap between his

critical precepts and his creative impulses. For there remains in his poetry, and there intrudes shyly into his criticism, an element opposed to all that he had asserted, a suppressed romanticism, which joins him intimately, not to his own age, but to the later nineteenth century. It can be seen most clearly in *The Forsaken Merman*, where the Merman describes his lost bride :

Once she sate with you and me,  
On a red gold throne in the heart of the sea,  
And the youngest sate on her knee.  
She comb'd its bright hair, and she tended it well,  
When down swung the sound of a far-off bell.  
She sigh'd, she look'd up through the clear green sea ;  
She said : ' I must go, for my kinsfolk pray  
In the little grey church on the shore to-day.'

So Arnold repressed the ' red gold thrones ' of romanticism for the ' grey ' duties of his own age, but memories remain : they dominate *The Strayed Reveller* ; Callicles represents them in *Empedocles on Etna* ; they intrude even into *The Scholar-Gipsy*. This tentative romanticism, with its desertion of contemporary problems, was the element in Arnold which many in the later decades were to follow. Nor was it in thought only that he led into strange places where he did not intend to lead, for prosodically in the tepid irregularities of *The Strayed Reveller*, and of other poems, he set an early example for later prosodic adventure.

To isolate Tennyson, Browning, and Arnold, and to study them alone in relation to the later nineteenth century would be to simplify unduly, for many minor movements flourish between 1830 and 1860 ; some of these are considered later in contact with the poetry which they influenced, but others have almost exhausted themselves before 1860. In the large perspective of the whole century such writers as Sir Henry Taylor<sup>15</sup> (1800-1886), the mild Wordsworthian of *Philip van Artevelde*, will have no distinct place, although he joins in that retreat from romanticism of the earlier half of the century. The ' Spasmodic ' poets, undigested as is much of their work, have a more formative influence. Under the influence of Goethe's *Faust* and of cosmic dramas such as *Manfred* and *Prometheus Unbound*, which have elements derived from it, a number of



poets between 1830 and 1850 had evolved a vague, grandiose, sometimes incoherent but frequently spectacular poetry. Philip James Bailey (1816-1902) had inaugurated it with *Festus* (1839); Richard Hengist Horne (1803-1884) had continued with *Orion* (1843); while Alexander Smith (1830-1867) in *A Life Drama* (1853) and Sydney Dobell (1824-1874) in *Balder* (1855) pursued the tradition. The wide popularity of their verse, ebullient with its own enthusiasms, may account in part for the sluggish reception which the Pre-Raphaelites gained in the fifties. The influence of the school marks the early work of Bell Scott, while Meredith, James Thomson, and Tennyson himself, are not untouched by its influence. Bell Scott shows a minor poet emerging from Spasmodic training into contact with the new poetry of Rossetti. In the fifties the reputation of the school suffers a sudden decline with the publication of Aytoun's review in *Blackwood's* for May 1854 of a supposed Spasmodic drama *Firmilian*, and of the full hoax tragedy a few months later.<sup>16</sup>

Other minor poets influence the later nineteenth century in unexpected ways. Richard Monckton Milnes, Lord Houghton (1809-1885), is remembered less for his poetry than for reviving an interest in Keats (1848); he opened the doors of his library to Swinburne and he was the patron of David Gray. Ebenezzer Jones (1820-1860), a poet of Spasmodic affinities, had an incidental influence on Meredith, while Rossetti proclaimed his virtues along with those of other neglected writers. More impressive is the influence of Emily Brontë, achieved in the few deathless lyrics in which she gave expression to a rebellious rejection of creeds, and an adherence to some vague but strenuously defined pantheism:

Vain are the thousand creeds  
That move men's hearts: unutterably vain;  
Worthless as withered weeds,  
Or idlest froth amid the boundless main.

Such lines impressed Swinburne, who was generous in his recognition of Emily Brontë's talent, and they enter more precisely into his conception of *Hertha*. In a firmer manner, Edward Fitzgerald (1809-1883) pervades the later period, and had he possessed the last infirmity of noble minds, his rare

aptitudes might have been organized into a major influence. He retained an independence in taste, and, despite a friendship with Tennyson, he refused to carry his admiration for Tennyson's verse much beyond *Poems* (1842), apart from his enthusiasm for the songs in the Arthurian *Idylls*. The same independence pursues him in his small but precious output of creative work. *The Rubáiyát* (1859), in which Omar Khayyám's verses are 'tessellated into a sort of Epicurean Eclogue in a Persian Garden',<sup>17</sup> entered into the poetry of the Pre-Raphaelites and continued as an influence into the closing decades of the century. Rossetti bought a remainder copy for a penny at Quaritch's and introduced the poem to Swinburne; the stanza is embedded in *Laus Veneris* and the philosophy penetrates widely into Swinburne's work.

The conditions already described make the decade 1850-1860 a period of profound transition in nineteenth century poetry. Tennyson and Browning, still at the height of their reputation, are seen by some discerning minds to have reached their climacteric. Arnold's position is already defined, though his most memorable work is to appear a little later in *New Poems* (1867). Rossetti had been working as early as 1847; in 1850 *The Germ* appeared and in 1858 Morris's *The Defence of Guenevere*. Swinburne had published *The Queen Mother* and *Rosamond* in 1860, and Patmore *The Angel in the House* in 1854. Here in the fifties the old meets the new, and the function of this volume is to trace the history of English poetry from this period of transition to the end of the century.

The changed quality of the new schools of poetry can be discovered most easily by contrasting their governing motives with those of early nineteenth century verse. The simplest single perspective can be gained by the generalization that the old controversy of faith and unfaith recedes from its dominant position as a poetic theme. It is as if the Oxford Movement, culminating in Newman's retreat to Rome (1845), had acted as a catharsis for that conflict as far as poetry is concerned, though the debate is a submerged motive until the end of the century. There arises, as one fresh element, a new religious poetry, Catholic and mystical in motive, removed entirely from the earlier disputes, and owing a spiritual allegiance to the religious poetry of the seventeenth century. Coventry Patmore

achieves an additional importance when he is considered as the pioneer of this movement. He is followed by G. M. Hopkins and Mrs. Meynell, while Christina Rossetti, as an early figure, unites this work to the poetry of the Pre-Raphaelites ; nor can the later verse of Robert Bridges be seen faithfully unless his indebtedness to this poetic tradition be allowed.

Such poets accept a faith and explore its symbolism and experience. With the Pre-Raphaelites there develops a school that withdraws from all such discussion. They solve the Victorian debate by excluding it from their poetry, and yet they are conscious of its existence. Morris, rejecting the High Church movement, which as an undergraduate had attracted him, protects his verse from his own age by a retreat to medievalism. Rossetti remains content to employ the ritual and legend of Catholicism without stating any obligation to the faith. Swinburne, despite his temporary allegiance to a pantheism not unlike Shelley's, his frequent vituperations of the Deity, and his excursions into politics, erects in his most formative period a world of artistic experience independent of current discussion. These writers, despite their widely varying methods, form the most compact movement in the earlier decades under discussion (1860-1880). With them romanticism returns, but it has suffered changes. It has lost its liberal contacts with philosophy and politics. No French Revolution arouses it into new hope or creative despair ; neither Swinburne's enthusiasm for Italy nor Morris's socialism is an adequate substitute for that earlier stimulus. Further, it would appear that romanticism while dormant in England had visited France, and now on its return the sea-change is apparent. The broader contacts of earlier English romanticism have been narrowed by a passage through the minds of Théophile Gautier and of Baudelaire ; the taint of mortality is upon it with an increased emphasis on its detachment from morals, while its technical methods have gained a certain preciousness through contact with the theory of *l'art pour l'art*. This is emphasized, even where there is no direct French influence, by the conscious withdrawal from life which characterizes the whole group. Not that this is without English precedent, as appears in the influence of Keats on Swinburne, and even Tennyson in his early poems had suggested an artistic detachment of which he

would not have personally approved. The Pre-Raphaelites gathered from early romanticism what they could best assimilate ; Keats as an influence is dominant ; Shelley appears intermittently ; Byron, whom they appreciate, they failed, unfortunately, to imitate ; Blake they rediscovered and he enters frequently into their work. Yet beyond all this, general conditions separate them widely from earlier romanticism, for if the French Revolution was a stimulus to poetry at the close of the eighteenth century, the society resulting from the industrial revolution is the plague from which Victorian romanticism tries to escape. Coleridge in the earlier days of romanticism had suggested the independence of the imagination ; now from the dread of the unloveliness around them later poets are led to advocate its isolation. This gives a sense of pathos to the revival of medievalism in nineteenth century poetry. Tennyson had used it, but apart from his early poetry which the Pre-Raphaelites admired, his motive was to display his own age. Now it is employed definitely as an escape. Sometimes one feels that Victorian romanticism is a ghostly masquerade ; only when all is quiet in the night do these poets come out and, donning their antique costumes, revive their dreams of long-faded beauty. When day has come they are gone, and the waking world knows them not. While thus they have narrowed the motives of romanticism and elevated love into a supreme position, they have enriched the technical resources of their poetry ; Rossetti has restored a more intimate contact with Italy than had existed since Elizabethan times ; Swinburne has brought Greece and France equally to his service ; and Morris has exploited Icelandic resources which, despite Gray's experiments, had remained strangely neglected. Through all their achievement, the sense of resignation implicit in their work gives the suggestion that here romanticism is entering on its last phase, and that impression is strengthened when one approaches the work of their adherents in the nineties.

While religious verse and the poetry of the Pre-Raphaelites dominate the period under survey, much else remains within these last four decades of the nineteenth century. Hardy and Meredith, for instance, respond in a fresh way to the main Victorian controversy by attempting to construct in verse a

new synthesis of their belief and of their knowledge, incorporating evolutionary conceptions into their formula. Their conclusions and their prosodic methods lie widely apart, but their endeavour adds a keen, newly quickened motive to poetry.

This is not the place to consider the intricate problem of later Victorian taste, though one can record the impression that in these decades while literacy is increasing the audience of poetry is changing. The tradition of humane education which had served us from the sixteenth century is breaking down, and there is a decreasing familiarity with the mythology which had served poets for over two centuries. The new public found contentment in fiction rather than in poetry, and though fiction can equal the achievements of any art form it has obviously a larger tolerance of pedestrian talents. Meredith and Hardy are driven from poetry to fiction, and increasingly poetry ceases to be a profession and becomes a subsidiary activity of men whose main employment lies elsewhere. Both the creation and the reading of poetry become esoteric rather than popular, and the period lacks any figure such as Shakespeare or Byron who can dominate the general audience without sacrificing any element of artistic identity. There is poetry for the larger audience, but it is obviously infected with the tastes of those to whom it is addressed. Yet the history of poetry is not the history of taste ; it is not what was once popular but what has sufficient integrity to remain that matters, and in these decades there emerges a varied body of poetry, traditional and experimental, which survives that ultimate test.

1. Estimates of the nineteenth century as a whole can be found in *A Survey (1830-1880)*, O. Elton, 1920 ; *Die englische Literatur des 19 und 20 Jahrhunderts*, Bernhard Fehr (Potsdam), 1931. *The Literature of the Victorian Era*, Hugh Walker (1910), is an earlier attempt, as is G. Saintsbury's brief study *A History of Nineteenth Century Literature (1780-1896)*, (1896, etc.). For the minor poets of the century *The Poets and the Poetry of the Century*, ed. A. H. Miles (1893, etc.), is still a useful guide. For the transition from the nineteenth century to the twentieth see *Modern English Writers (1890-1914)*, Harold Williams (revised ed. 1925).

2. Essay prefixed to the selections from Keats in Ward's *English Poets*, Vol. IV (1880).

3. *The Nineteenth Century*, January 1888.
4. See *Ruskin (and others) on Byron*, R. W. Chambers, English Association Pamphlet, November 1925; *Byron in England*, S. C. Chew (1924).
5. Preface to *Poetry of Byron* (1881).
6. In criticism as apart from creation, Byron does gain appreciation later in the century. See Chambers loc. cit. in 4.
7. *Letter to John Murray*, etc., February 7, 1821.
8. *Table Talk* for September 12, 1831.
9. *London and Westminster Review*, August 1838.
10. *Coleridge on Logic and Learning*, Alice D. Snyder (1929); *Coleridge as Philosopher*, J. H. Muirhead (1930).
11. *The Romantic Revolt*, C. E. Vaughan (1907).
12. I heard this phrase used of Arnold by W. P. Ker. I am not aware that it occurs in his published work.
13. For an interesting and unusual view of Clough, see Humbert Wolfe in *The Eighteen-Sixties* (1932).
14. Preface to *Poems* (1853).
15. Lascelles Abercrombie has a study in *The Eighteen-Sixties* (1932).
16. For details see *Memoir of W. E. Aytoun*, Theodore Martin (1867).
17. *Letters of Edward Fitzgerald* (1907), I, 348.



# ENGLISH POETRY IN THE LATER NINETEENTH CENTURY

## CHAPTER I

### DANTE GABRIEL ROSSETTI

**A**T times a writer appears whose significance extends beyond his actual work or its intrinsic merit. He establishes himself, by the strength of his personality, in a symbolic relationship to his time, and his influence permeates the work of his contemporaries and successors. This power, which Coleridge had once possessed, is the commanding characteristic of Dante Gabriel Rossetti <sup>1</sup> (1828-1882). Through him the changing values in Victorian poetry become apparent, and around him are the men who divert poetry from the purposes and motives employed by Tennyson and Browning and Matthew Arnold. It was not that Rossetti occupied himself in any sterile attack on Tennyson and Browning, for he admired Tennyson's early work, and he imitated Browning, but when his mind and creative power came to their maturity he found that he was working in a different way. Whatever may be true of painting, the Pre-Raphaelite movement in poetry is little more than the emergence of Rossetti, a fiery, disruptive mind, sometimes disordered, but always stimulating young writers to new poetic methods.

His whole tradition was fresh. The grandfather was an Italian blacksmith of Vasto. His father, Gabriele Rossetti,<sup>2</sup> had been driven out of Naples by the despotism of Ferdinand, and had spent his exile in England teaching Italian and indicating an anti-papal significance to the *Divina Commedia*. Thus Dante Gabriel had grown up outside the traditions of English life. His mother was a sister of that erratic physician, John William Polidori, who had been a member of one of those human menageries that accompanied Byron on his continental



travels, and who, after various exploits in literature and medicine, died 'from a subtle poison of his own composition'. English life and even the traditional approach to English literature were to Rossetti of strangeness all compact. The one unity to which he gave passionate loyalty was that of his own family. Born in 1828, and christened Gabriel Charles Dante, he was one of four children; Maria, the eldest (1827), became a nun in an Anglican order; William Michael, the dull but exhaustive chronicler of the family, was born in 1829, and in December 1830 Christina was born, the last of the children, whose births all date within three years and ten months.

The background of his life was Italian, but it was a background which he never saw. While he visited France and Belgium he never set foot in Italy. Catholicism lay in his past and rose at times with its symbolism to colour his poetry. He contrived to assimilate the aesthetic possibilities of Catholic ritual and legend without being affected by the faith. Similarly, his mother's devout Protestantism, which dominated the home, left him untouched. His father's life had been sacrificed to political conviction, and the Charlotte Street house was once illuminated with the presence of Mazzini, but to the problems of politics and of social institutions Rossetti remained indifferent. He discovered his own world in poetry and pictorial art and found there complete occupation. Had he been captured before adolescence by the traditional machinery of education he might have evolved into a foreign-looking Englishman, not too indistinguishable from the pattern, and possessing the right opinions and the right prejudices. He escaped. He had irregular tuition, first at a day school of indifferent merits, and later (1837-1843) at King's College School and at King's College. This, combined with his father's instruction and the services of a German tutor, left him ignorant of many things, but preserved a mind passionately free for its own devotions. Freedom was his privilege, but an absence of discipline was his penalty: it left a telling mark on his painting; it smudged and blurred a number of his poems. Millais, who had the discipline without the genius, comments on one of his drawings: 'A very clever and original design, beautifully executed . . . chairs out of perspective,' and his brother, William Michael,

adds the laconic comment that Gabriel never mastered perspective nor paid much attention to it.

In 1846, with his general education ended, and after certain preliminary instruction in painting, Rossetti entered himself as a student in the antique schools of the Royal Academy, but the restlessness which dominated his life soon became apparent, and in March 1848 he wrote to Ford Madox Brown for permission to become his pupil. Brown, a young man of twenty-seven, accepted the young stranger and set him to work on still-life themes ('pickle-jars and bottles'), a sobering discipline, which Rossetti considered as little better than the Academy Schools. Chafing for a freer movement where accomplishment could be achieved without restrictions, he was attracted by the work of Holman Hunt, who was then only twenty-one. Rossetti, with the impetuousness which marks his every action at this period, called on Hunt and asked him plaintively if pickle-jars were an essential preliminary to painting. Hunt decided that they were not, and Rossetti was allowed to struggle with original compositions in oils. Of all his painter associates Hunt was the most generous, and he suffered later more than any member of the group in his struggle for recognition. He introduced Rossetti to Millais, the brilliant boy of mid-Victorian painting, who had exhibited in the Academy at seventeen and who now at the mature age of nineteen years was settling down to a career of artistic prosperity.

Such were the three young men who set before themselves the task of founding a new movement to reform English painting. It is probable that all they wished at first was to associate with one another, to strengthen their common belief in the high purposes of their art. Millais, the most facile and the most shallow, pampered and successful, had more technical skill than the others with less imaginative insight. Hunt, sincere and slow, firm in his convictions, and with a keen religious faith, clung to his conception of Pre-Raphaelitism long after the others had lost touch with the movement. Rossetti knew little of painting and less of the history of art, but with his great forehead, his delicate tapering fingers, his deep voice and large sensuous eyes, he was a figure that demanded leadership. A vague association was not enough for him; his Italian tradition suggested closer alliances, and so he combined the

knowledge of his associates with his own purposes and enthusiasms to form a sort of secret society, a Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood, with definite principles and methods of work.

The Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood, formed in 1848, was by 1851 largely disbanded. Men of such varied temperaments could not long agree, nor was Rossetti an easy or even a fair associate. The fact that the movement ended in discord has led to most confusing accounts of its main purposes. The simplest and clearest statements are those of William Michael Rossetti, who acted as major-domo to the group, and of Ruskin, who championed it, partly because he thought that its principles were rather like his own.<sup>3</sup> W. M. Rossetti, in his memoir<sup>4</sup> of his brother, enumerates the objects of the Brotherhood: (1) To have genuine ideas to express; (2) to study Nature attentively, so as to know how to express them; (3) to sympathize with what is direct and serious and heartfelt in previous art to the exclusion of what is conventional and self-parading and learned by rote; (4) to produce thoroughly good pictures and statues. Ruskin in his famous *Times* letter of May 13, 1850, explained more critically what he believed Pre-Raphaelite aims to be. 'The Pre-Raphaelites (I cannot congratulate them on common-sense in the choice of a *nom de guerre*) do not desire or pretend in any way to imitate antique painting as such. They know very little of antique paintings who suppose the works of these young artists to resemble them. As far as I can judge of their aim—for as I said, I do not know the men themselves—the Pre-Raphaelites intend to surrender no advantage which the knowledge or the invention of the present time can afford to their art. They intend to return to early days in this one particular only—that, as far as in them lies, they will draw either what they see or what they suppose might have been the actual facts of the scene they desire to represent, irrespective of any conventional rules of picture-making; and they have chosen their unfortunate, though not inaccurate, name, because all artists did this before Raphael's time, and after Raphael's time *did* not this, but sought to paint fair pictures rather than represent stern facts; of which the consequence has been that from Raphael's time to this day historical art has been in acknowledged decadence.' It is for the students of English art to determine the importance of the

movement in the history of English painting. Even if its principles were wrong, or even if the pictures produced failed to conform to the principles, it served at least to awaken in English minds a recognition that painting was an art of importance, not an appendage to household decoration, or a substitute for fiction.

The term Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood would not enter into the history of English poetry except for two accidents: first, Rossetti was a poet, and secondly, he was fortunate in influencing forward minds in poetry as well as in painting. Yet little of Rossetti's own work, or of that of his associates, conforms to the principles set out by the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood. As has been already suggested, the Pre-Raphaelite movement in poetry is little more than an inconvenient synonym for Rossetti's personal influence on English poetry.

The Brotherhood itself had a brief literary venture in a periodical named *The Germ*; it first appeared in January 1850, and after two numbers it was re-named *Art and Poetry*; it ceased with the fourth issue in April 1850. Its policy was never clearly defined, but it served as a means for the publication of Rossetti's *The Blessed Damozel* and of ten other poems, and of his prose narrative *Hand and Soul*. Christina Rossetti also contributed verse, and here appeared too an early draft of Thomas Woolner's *My Beautiful Lady*, and work by Coventry Patmore. It was one of Rossetti's most barren projects that brought him seven years later (1857) into contact with two younger men whom he was to influence. He had undertaken to adorn the Debating Hall (now the Library) of the Union at Oxford with frescoes painted by himself and his friends. Among his pupils was a young Oxford man, Edward Burne-Jones, whom he had persuaded to abandon regular undergraduate studies for painting. Burne-Jones had brought to Rossetti's notice one of his own set, a stocky, thick-set, bearded fellow, William Morris, who had already written poems. It chanced that as they worked on these Arthurian frescoes, which damp and the fumes of naked gas-jets were soon to obliterate, there came to Rossetti an undergraduate from Balliol with Birkbeck Hill to introduce him as Mr. Algernon Charles Swinburne. So Rossetti met two men to whose creative powers he was to give keen impetus. They both developed to produce

work that is widely different from his, and neither of them is Pre-Raphaelite as the term was understood in 1848, but, like Rossetti himself, they brought fresh elements into the poetry of the century.

Rossetti's published work is contained in three volumes—*The Early Italian Poets* (1861) (republished as *Dante and his Circle*, 1874); *Poems* (1870) (republished 1881); *Ballads and Sonnets* (1881). In 1886 W. M. Rossetti published *The Works* (re-issued in an enlarged edition in 1911), with a number of additional pieces not previously published. In 1930 *The Ballad of Jan Van Hunks*, an early piece revised later, was published. The information which chronology presents is frequently misleading: it does not necessarily bear a close relationship to that secret time sequence formed by the ordering in the mind of imaginative experience. With Rossetti the dates of volume publication bear an unusually false relationship to the period of actual composition, and in pursuing this difference one comes into contact with the most intimate side of his life. In 1850, one of Rossetti's friends, Walter Deverell, had seen in a London milliner's shop a young woman assistant of exceptional beauty, named Elizabeth Siddal,<sup>1</sup> whose features have become known as one of the types which Rossetti repainted with unwearying tenacity. Miss Siddal was beautiful, but she was not robust; it is probable that even when Rossetti first knew her she had consumptive elements in her constitution. No one was less well designed to express considerate affection than Rossetti; he seized what he wanted and used it tempestuously for his own purposes. Friends, patrons, acquaintances, all suffered from an egoism that was so natural that it was almost unconscious. Miss Siddal was to suffer too. She had sufficient talent in drawing to attract Ruskin, but her cultural background and her physical strength were ill-adapted to struggle with this fiery and irresponsible spirit with which she was brought into such intimate contact. Nor was the situation simplified by Rossetti's encounter in 1857 with Jane Burden, later Mrs. William Morris, who exercised a deep influence upon him. The marriage was delayed until 1860, and in 1861 Elizabeth Rossetti gave birth to a stillborn child. In 1862, suffering equally from phthisis and from Rossetti's neglect, she took an excessive dose of laudanum and died. Overcome by

remorse, Rossetti, unobserved, placed the manuscript of his poems as a gesture of expiation in her coffin. It is difficult to stand in judgment over such actions, which, viewed dispassionately, may seem emotional quixotism. But, as Meredith could have told Rossetti, the price of sentiment is a high one. Rossetti discovered it to be excessive. Urged by numerous friends, he was led in 1869 to gain Home Office permission to disinter the poems, which he used in preparing the 1870 volume. Part of the price to be paid for Rossetti's excursion into sentiment lies in the difficulty of chronology in his poetry. His first volume, apart from the Italian translations, is published in 1870, but the poems it contains belong mainly to the periods 1847-1853 and 1868-1870.

In 1862 Rossetti moved to Cheyne Walk, Chelsea, where for a time he had Swinburne and Meredith as co-tenants. The years that followed were the fullest and most prosperous of his life. He had freedom for his own habits of life, as much work as he desired to undertake, and as many friends as he wished. It was only in 1866 that he began to feel the effect of ill-health. In 1868 Mrs. Morris reappeared as a sitter for his paintings, and under the influence of her personality he laid the foundation, in 1868-1871, to his sonnet sequence *The House of Life*. In 1868 and 1869 he visited Penkill Castle, in Ayrshire, where William Bell Scott was staying under the patronage of Miss Alice Boyd. The 1869 visit, while it did little to improve his health, led him to write a number of poems, *Troy Town*, *Eden Bower*, *The Stream's Secret*. In 1869 he began to take chloral to induce sleep, and from that year to the end he was consistently struggling with various degrees of ill-health. 'I am hardly my own ghost,' he wrote to Allingham in 1870. The *Poems*, which appeared in 1870, were warmly received, and this encouraged Rossetti to reissue his Italian translations in an enlarged form as *Dante and his Circle* in 1874. Amidst the praise there came, in 1871, the insidious attack of Robert Buchanan, who, under the pseudonym of 'Thomas Maitland', wrote an article in *The Contemporary Review* for October 1871, entitled *The Fleshly School of Poetry—Mr. D. G. Rossetti*. The article was elaborated in 1872 into a volume, *The Fleshly School of Poetry, and other Phenomena of the Day*, and Swinburne was included in the diatribe.

Rossetti was deeply affected by the virulence of this criticism ; the phrase which particularly hurt him was the suggestion that he was binding himself by solemn league and covenant ' to extol fleshliness as the distinct and supreme end of poetic and pictorial art '. Buchanan, later, withdrew this vulgar mis-appraisal, but at the time it wounded Rossetti deeply. He prepared an effective reply, which was published in *The Athenæum* in 1871, but the incident helped to develop in him a feeling, which later grew into a mania, that he was being persecuted. Between 1872-1874 he recovered sufficiently at Kelmscott to paint *La Ghirlandata* and other oils in which Mrs. Morris appeared, but little poetry was produced. In the closing years of that decade, while ill-health was continually dominant, he continued to paint, and his work remained popular with buyers. Between 1879-1881 there came a return to poetry with *Rose Mary*, *The White Ship*, *The King's Tragedy*, and some additional poems to *The House of Life*. The early volume of 1870 had been a continued success, and in 1881 Rossetti republished it with revisions, and with the addition of *The Bride's Prelude*. *The House of Life* in an expanded form and the new poems and ballads were published in the same year as *Ballads and Sonnets*. In April 1882, at the age of fifty-four, he died.

This biographical account has served to show that the dates of volume publication (1870 and 1881) are a misleading guide to the chronology of Rossetti's work. His poetry is concentrated in certain groups of years, and even then it is written in the scanty leisure of a professional painter. The first period contains the tentative work before 1847, in which year *The Blessed Damozel* was written. He was already engaged on the Italian translations which belong mainly to 1845-1849. The major part of the early verse is produced between 1847-1854. There follows a lull in poetic production until 1868-1870 when he writes vigorously, mainly upon the expansion of *The House of Life*, and finally in the period of his last ill-health there emerges a short period of intensive revision, and composition between 1879-1881. In the following survey the poems are discussed chronologically with reference to these years of poetic activity.

Rossetti approached poetical composition with a background of reading very different from that of his contemporaries.

Italian was to him a second language, and to this had been added instruction in German and in French. His own reading had lain mainly in stories of romance, in Terror Tales and in supernatural themes : Scott had mingled with ' Monk ' Lewis's *Tales of Terror* and *Tales of Wonder* and with Meinhold's *Sidonia the Sorceress* and *The Amber Witch*. Ballads had early attracted him, and he found in his German reading a close union of ballad form with weird and supernatural themes. One of his earliest pieces was a ballad attempt, *Sir Hugh the Heron*, and his first successful plunge into poetry is a translation of Bürger's *Lenore* in 1844, a remarkable piece of work for a boy of sixteen despite its prosodic inadequacies. The influence of German poetry was strong at this early period ; he read parts of *Faust*, mainly one may imagine for the sake of Mephistopheles, and in 1846 he rendered Hartmann von Aue's *Der Arme Heinrich* as *Henry the Leper*. Further, he was already attempting translations from the Italian. He chose his own reading in English poetry : he early recognized his affinities with Keats ; he admired and imitated Browning, and he was frequently making his own discoveries among less well-known poets. The record of these years shows that Rossetti's reading and learning were much wider than they often appeared to be.

A number of the poems in the years 1847-1854 are experimental. *A Last Confession* (begun in 1849) is in style an exercise in Browning's dramatic monologue form. The theme of jealousy and murder with an Italian setting Rossetti may have contrived by combining suggestions from Byron's *The Giaour* with recollections of some refugee at his father's house. He has given his narrative, particularly at the close, the vibrant urgency of Browning's style, but he appears restless amidst the continued realism which the tale demands. In two memorable passages he leaves the dramatic situation and its necessities to describe more pleasing scenes where sensuous and mystical elements unite ; one is a description of a woman's face, a recognizable verse account of the Rossetti type, and the other a dream :

I know last night  
I dreamed I saw into the garden of God,  
Where women walked whose painted images  
I have seen with candles round them in the church.



They bent this way and that, one to another,  
 Playing : and over the long golden hair  
 Of each there floated like a ring of fire  
 Which when she stooped stooped with her, and when she rose  
 Rose with her. Then a breeze flew in among them,  
 As if a window had been opened in heaven  
 For God to give His blessing from, before  
 This world of ours should set ; (for in my dream  
 I thought our world was setting, and the sun  
 Flared, a spent taper ;) and beneath that gust  
 The rings of light quivered like forest-leaves.

In *Jenny* (1848 and 1858-1869) he attempted a more lyrical expression in the dramatic monologue form. Rossetti thought well of this poem and wrote to William Allingham in 1860 : ' *Jenny* . . . I reckon the most serious thing I have written.' He explores in four-beat couplets the thoughts of a man who sits with a tired prostitute asleep beside him. Very diverse judgments have been expressed on the poem, whose language, despite its psychological insight, seems frequently sentimental and overstrained. *Jenny* was an experiment, with Browning again as the model, in portraying the mind of a character as revealed in a dramatic situation. Rossetti discovered that while he could treat such themes of human experience they were not the material in which his poetic power could best be revealed.

From the poems of 1847-1854 there emerge dominant motives, which show how Rossetti is separating his own individual quality both from imitation and from preconceived poetic theories. In the early poem *My Sister's Sleep* (1847-1849) he had attempted to obey the major Pre-Raphaelite principles of accuracy in detail and truth to nature :

Our mother rose from where she sat :  
 Her needles, as she laid them down,  
 Met lightly, and her silken gown  
 Settled : no other noise than that.

Here it is apparent that he has attempted to restrain himself into a mosaic of accurate detail disciplined to attain an effect of poetic realism. But as in painting so in poetry this self-prescribed emphasis on minuteness came into conflict with a mystical element in his mind, elusive, fugitive, fashioning its

dream thought into dim and intangible images. This conflict of material detail with Dantesque vision yields his most original poetry in this period. It appears clearly in his best-known poem, *The Blessed Damozel*, written by 1847 and frequently revised. The scene is that of a woman in heaven watching her lover on earth. Rossetti gained suggestions from Poe, and possibly he knew Herrick's *Comfort to a Youth that had Lost his Love*; <sup>5</sup> a number of the details arise from direct memories of *The Divine Comedy*.<sup>6</sup> The treatment, however, is fresh, and illustrates these two contrasting elements in Rossetti's mind. The theme is of mystical suggestion, a moment in the *Paradiso*, but its purpose is to praise the human love of man and woman. This contrast of mystical and material is not incongruous but pleasurable and surprising. It is emphasized by the description of heaven as 'the rampart of God's house', and by the earthly imagery through which the figure in heaven is portrayed:

The blessed damozel leaned out  
From the gold bar of Heaven.

We see the universe from heaven, but it is with the simple imagery of our own world: the earth, 'a midge'; the curled moon, 'a little feather'; and the souls mounting to God 'like thin flames'. The submersion of these two elements in Rossetti's imagination and their consequent union in a poem can be paralleled in a number of pieces of this period, notably in *The Card Dealer* (1849). The poem opens as a precise excerpt of realistic description. Rossetti, with a picture by Theodore von Holst in mind, portrays a woman dealing cards. The following stanza illustrates the luxurious wealth of coloured detail in the opening movement of the poem:

Her fingers let them softly through,  
Smooth polished silent things;  
And each one as it falls reflects  
In swift light-shadowings,  
Blood-red and purple, green and blue,  
The great eyes of her rings.

Later this world of realism is dissolved into dream, symbolical in its purpose and medieval in suggestion, and it is with this mood that the poem closes:

Thou seest the card that falls,—she knows  
 The card that followeth :  
 Her game in thy tongue is called Life,  
 As ebbs thy daily breath :  
 When she shall speak, thou'lt learn her tongue  
 And know she calls it Death.

*Love's Nocturn* (1854), a poem which rests in a twilit obscurity, shows the triumph of fantasy over the world of fact. Rossetti, describing the house of a magician who sends dreams into sleeping minds, imagines that he might himself penetrate this 'vaporous unaccountable' store-house to send his dream to his lady. This theme is evolved subtly, from a background of elaborate dream detail. The stanza, as the following example illustrates, was one of the most intricate, both in rhyme and numbers, that Rossetti evolved :

Poets' fancies all are there :  
 There the elf-girls flood with wings  
 Valleys full of plaintive air ;  
 There breathe perfumes : there in rings  
 Whirl the foam-bewildered springs ;  
       Siren there  
 Winds her dizzy hair and sings.

Further, Rossetti contrives a dim, intangible imagery to sustain the mood, as in this description of the approach to this dream-world :

Groping in the windy stair,  
 (Darkness and the breath of space  
 Like loud waters everywhere.)

It is as if all the solid details which decorate his Pre-Raphaelite exercises in verse had disappeared in a night of storm, whence all that can be seen and touched is banished, so that one gropes, terrified and yet fascinated, in a world where sound and wind and water are all that remain of the scenes of common day. Such are the two elements which struggle for supremacy in Rossetti's mind, and part of the history of his poetical development is the increasing mastery of the Dantesque visions over the world of reality.

This conflict, while it rests at the centre of the problem of Rossetti as a poet, will not alone serve as an interpretation

of his poetic purposes. In the period 1847-1854 he disentangled his poetry from its prescribed Victorian duties of expounding the ideas of the time ; he released it from its obligations to investigate the conditions of moral or spiritual consciousness. This he achieved naturally, almost secretly, as if he were unaware of his own purposes. He never had to revolt against his century because he was never in it ; spiritually he existed not in an age of scientific discovery with an emphasis on ' the condition of the people ', but in a world of his own which had the *décor* of Dante's Italy. Seldom does he choose a contemporary theme : in 1849 he wrote a series of discursive poems describing his journey to Paris and Belgium, but these were, with one exception, not published with his permission. In 1852 he was led for some unexplained reason to write an ode on *Wellington's Funeral*. But his characteristic poetry is marked by a withdrawal from contemporary problem and circumstance. It can be seen in *The Burden of Nineveh* (1850 and later), where he shows how distasteful and unreal was the modern world in which by an unkind accident of time he found his physical existence :

In our Museum galleries  
 To-day I lingered o'er the prize  
 Dead Greece vouchsafes to living eyes,—  
 Her Art for ever in fresh wise  
     From hour to hour rejoicing me.  
 Sighing I turned at last to win  
 Once more the London dirt and din ;  
 And as I made the swing-door spin  
 And issued, they were hoisting in  
     A winged beast from Nineveh.

And the same approach is continued later in the poem :—

Now, thou poor god, within this hall  
 Where the blank windows blind the wall  
 From pedestal to pedestal,  
 The kind of light shall on thee fall  
     Which London takes the day to be :  
 While school-foundations in the act  
 Of holiday, three files compact,  
 Shall learn to view thee as a fact  
 Connected with that zealous tract :  
     ' Rome—Babylon and Nineveh.'

In withdrawing to his own world, he felt no antagonism to religious belief, as Shelley and Swinburne had done. One may trace an autobiographical sentiment in the lines in *The Bride's Prelude* :

But though I loved not holy things,  
To hear them scorned brought pain,—  
They were my childhood.

His mind delighted in the rich symbolism of Catholic ritual, and he employs it without believing in the faith which it represents. He used it as he would have used any other material whose form and suggestion attracted him. This explains the presence of *Ave* (1847 and later) among the poems of this period. Written in four-beat couplets derived from his study of Blake, the poem is a moving account of the life of the Virgin Mother, ending in what seems almost a confession of faith. The note attached to the poem in 1869, however, reveals his purpose : ' This hymn was written as a prologue to a series of designs. Art still identifies herself with all faiths for her own purposes.' Similarly, the other poems on religious themes are closely connected with these purposes, and with the possibilities of Christian story in both poetry and painting ; it is this motive that governs both *The Portrait* and the sonnets on *Mary's Girlhood*. The latter are closely connected with his early picture of *The Annunciation* :

This is that blessed Mary, pre-elect  
God's Virgin. Gone is a great while, and she  
Dwelt young in Nazareth of Galilee.  
Unto God's will she brought devout respect,  
Profound simplicity of intellect,  
And supreme patience. From her mother's knee  
Faithful and hopeful ; wise in charity ;  
Strong in grave peace ; in pity circumspect.

Swinburne summarized Rossetti's approach to Christianity when he wrote : ' Rossetti has felt and given the mere physical charm of Christianity with no admixture of doctrine or of doubt.'

In examining the main features of Rossetti's poetic consciousness, it has been necessary to concentrate on poems which suggest more emphatically his personal qualities ; others

remain, and among them some of his most popular pieces. He had, through his early reading of Scott and of Percy's *Reliques*, supplemented by Bürger and Goethe, attained a strong interest in the ballad form. He realized both the intention and method of the ballad, the allusive presentation of a theme swiftly developed, and the depth of feeling simply and unerringly conveyed. This he understood, but the complexity and conflict of his creative impulses led him frequently to modify the direct simplicity of the ballad form, to meet his sophisticated purposes. He frequently introduces subtleties of verbal suggestion inherited from Keats and Tennyson and intricacies of mood derived from those of his other poems. His earliest verse experiments were in this form. *The Ballad of Jan van Hunks*, made when he was eighteen, was much re-fashioned in his last years. It is an unusual piece for Rossetti, an exercise in comic grotesque, based on memories of a story which he had read in childhood of the devil's wager with a Dutchman for a smoking match. Slighter than the other poems, it confirms the generalization that the Pre-Raphaelites had little talent for humour in poetry. *David Shand*, another early poem, is a close approximation to ballad form, while it is only half-serious in theme. With *The Staff and Scrip* (1851-1852) he entered successfully into possession of the ballad form. The story, adapted from the *Gesta Romanorum*, is of a pilgrim who, having fought for a lady, leaves her at his death his staff and scrip. In the medieval legend when rich suitors approached her she grew ashamed of this humble legacy, but Rossetti makes her faithful to her champion and gives the poem a mystical conclusion :

The lists are set in Heaven to-day,  
The bright pavilions shine ;  
Fair hangs thy shield, and none gainsay ;  
The trumpets sound in sign  
That she is thine.

The stanza is complex and leads Rossetti into a riot of imperfect rhymes, yet the story is conveyed in the ballad way, while his own values and colouring have been added without incongruity. *Sister Helen*, the other ballad poem of this early period, was frequently revised. First drafted in 1851 it was published in 1854 in *The Düsseldorf Album*,<sup>7</sup> with only thirty stanzas, and

this early version gains in conclusiveness over the forty-two stanza version of 1881. The poem has original quality and has been variously appraised. Medieval in setting, it tells of a woman who, witch-like, burns a waxen image of her unfaithful lover so that she may damn him, body and soul. It arises from Rossetti's early interest in witchcraft, and its long, trailing refrains capture the appropriate atmosphere of magic. Yet the length of the poem, particularly in the later version, detracts from its effect, and what should have been weird is in danger of being monotonous. Apart from ballads Rossetti achieved in the period 1847-1854 two narrative pieces. *The Bride's Prelude* (1848 and 1859), an unfinished poem, though medieval in setting is a study of human feeling in the story of a woman forced to marry the man who had once seduced her. The movements of the poem are powerfully conveyed and a rich imagery sustains them. Rossetti left a prose memorandum indicating a conclusion to the theme, but he never discovered the mood in which to complete it. In *Dante at Verona* (1848-1850 and 1869-1870) he extended his interest in Dante into an imaginative narrative which is the longest portrayal of normal circumstance in his work.

The poetry of this period, while it suggests the dominant moods in Rossetti's poetry, shows at the same time a variety of sympathy and of experiment. Later, the major and individual motives conquer the whole of his poetic consciousness. Nothing served more to direct and concentrate these purposes than his translations of Dante and his contemporaries, first published as *The Early Italian Poets* (1861) and enlarged as *Dante and his Circle* in 1874. Not only had the work a profound effect on Rossetti himself, it served to influence the development of Victorian romanticism ; here more than anywhere else Swinburne found himself indebted to Rossetti ; Patmore seems aware of it ; the approach to sentiment, the very colour and fiction of these translations occur and re-occur in the poetry of the later nineteenth century. Much of Rossetti's most secure work occurs in this volume. He knew both languages, and he had a mastery of phrase which transferred delicate poetic sentiment from one language to another, uninjured and almost undisturbed. His approach to Dante shows how he recognized his own poetic sympathies ; for he is aware that it

is the Dante of the *Vita Nuova* and the sonnets, not the Dante of the *Commedia* that attracts him. He shuts out from his work disturbing metaphysical conceptions. It was not that he did not admire the *Commedia*, but that its 'mighty voice' dealt with problems outside the self-imposed structures of his limited world. Rossetti, while retaining the features of the Italian, achieved pieces that have the strength and integrity of original poems. This can be seen from his translation in the following sonnet from the *Vita Nuova* :

My lady looks so gentle and so pure  
When yielding salutation by the way,  
That the tongue trembles and has nought to say,  
And the eyes, which fain would see, may not endure.  
And still, amid the praise she hears secure,  
She walks with humbleness for her array ;  
Seeming a creature sent from Heaven to stay  
On earth, and show a miracle made sure.

She is so pleasant in the eyes of men  
That through the sight the inmost heart doth gain  
A sweetness which needs proof to know it by :  
And from between her lips there seems to move  
A soothing essence that is full of love,  
Saying for ever to the spirit, ' Sigh ! '

Rossetti rightly asserted that an important element in his work lay in his rendering of lesser-known poets who were of Dante's age. He introduced to English readers a range of writers who had been previously little known and at the same time revealed new suggestions of theme and idiom to English poetry. The poetry in the volume is more varied than has often been allowed, and whatever minor distortion of phrase Rossetti allowed himself, he seldom failed to render the Italian original adequately into an English poem. His success is noticeable in his renderings of Guido Calvalcanti, who, despite the 'stiffness and cold conceits', which Rossetti suggests as an occasional disfigurement, has a vigour and freshness which yield themselves to the English version. The following version of one of Calvalcanti's sonnets shows Rossetti adapting himself to a style very different from that required for his renderings of Dante :



Beauty in woman ; the high will's decree ;  
 Fair knighthood armed for manly exercise ;  
 The pleasant song of birds ; love's soft replies ;  
 The strength of rapid ships upon the sea ;  
 The serene air when light begins to be ;  
 The white snow, without wind that falls and lies ;  
 Fields of all flower ; the place where waters rise ;  
 Silver and gold ; azure in jewellery :—  
 Weighed against these, the sweet and quiet worth  
 Which my dear lady cherishes at heart  
 Might seem a little matter to be shown ;  
 Being truly, over these, as much apart  
 As the whole heaven is greater than this earth.  
 All good to kindred natures cleaveth soon.

The work of translation, apart from its effect on his approach to sentiment in his own poems, had a marked influence on his style. The translation of *Lenore* shows that he had an early tendency towards the use of imperfect rhymes, and to rhyming a stressed syllable with an unstressed ending in the following line. He felt possibly from his Italian reading that English was weak in rhyming words, and that the concession of imperfect rhymes would alone compensate for this deficiency. He certainly found in his Italian translations that the complex verse patterns could not be maintained unless imperfect rhymes were used. He retains the practice in his own work and frequently employs it with dangerous licence. It has been suggested that a contributory explanation can be found in his early reading of ballads, though Rossetti by no means confines its use to his ballad imitations. In the Italian poems he discovered also the use of a symbolical description of Love and Death as abstract qualities which he retained in his own work.

The influence of his Italian studies is seen most impressively in his sonnet sequence, *The House of Life* <sup>8</sup> ; some of the poems in this work belong to the period 1847–1853, the largest group to 1869–1871, and others to 1879–1881. To estimate the quality of this work is to approach the penetralia of Rossetti's poetic life, for here, apart from a few detached sonnets, he exposes his approach to love and art, and his philosophy of experience. The influence of Dante is marked both on style and conception, and Walter Pater devotes his essay on Rossetti largely to elucidating this relationship. 'Like Dante,' Pater suggests, 'he knows no region of spirit which shall not be

sensuous also, or material.' This union is applied by Rossetti to Love alone, for the other regions of spirit have been banished to the outer edges of his mind. Apart from this difference more than the gulf of time separates Rossetti from Dante, for the conflict of motives apparent in his other poetry enters here to a marked degree. First, he possessed towards Love an element of worship, rarefied and complex, that 'ideal intensity of love—of love based upon a perfect yet peculiar type of physical or material beauty—which is enthroned in the midst of those mysterious powers; Youth and Death, Destiny and Fortune, Fame, Poetic Fame, Memory, Oblivion and the like'. Strangely contrary to this, there existed in his life a disordered restlessness of passion, a vigorous sensuality, at times a broad coarseness. Both these elements were in his life; the first alone was allowed to escape into his poetry. There are men in certain periods who resolve into their imaginative creations all that is within their consciousness; Rossetti exercises a certain intellectual censorship upon his conceptions, and one of the masters of that censorship is Dante. It is not that sensuality is excluded—the *Nuptial Sleep* sonnet which led to the 'Fleshly School' attack is evidence of that—but that its portrayal has the sombre sobriety of ritual. The effect is as if a chastity of mind had combined with a corruptness in experience, and a gracious idealism of sentiment existed without innocence. In his analysis of emotion and passion he knows nothing of joy or that geniality towards love which allowed Chaucer to describe it as the 'olde daunce'. He lacks, as do all the romantic poets except Byron, the intrusion of broad human laughter. This solemn apotheosis of Eros penetrates the whole texture of *The House of Life*. 'As a god self-slain on his own strange altar' he performs this oblation of his personality to Love, and presiding dimly over the sacrifice is the ever-present figure of Death.

The sequence is divided into two parts: Part I, Youth and Change, has as its main argument Rossetti's approach to Love. Part II, Change and Fate, portraying later moods, expresses a more general approach to life, with a confession of remorse and a realization of mistaken purposes. At the same time many of the poems are incidental. Each sonnet embodies a single mood:

A Sonnet is a moment's monument,—  
 Memorial from the Soul's eternity  
 To one dead deathless hour.

The moment is explored with an intricacy of imagery, whose landscape belongs to intangible, twilight things, waters, and silence, moonlight, and still, half-shadowed shapes. The realistic detail of the earlier Pre-Raphaelite experiments has been exorcized so that these sombre dream shapes may exist unchallenged. In such phrases as 'the dim shoal and weary water of the place of sighs', 'Wild images of Death, Shadows and shoals that edge eternity', he maintains consistently the sombre landscape in which the thought of the poems may dwell. In Part I he portrays Love enthroned above Truth and Hope and Fame, and Youth, and he explores its development, using both a Christian symbolism and a deeply sensual detail to indicate the union of spirit and matter. From the earlier sonnets it would appear that the conception of Love arises from his attachment to one woman, but in Sonnet XXXIV it becomes apparent that the loved one is only an instrument through which some mystical abstract quality, Love, becomes momentarily apparent :

Lo ! what am I to Love, the lord of all ?  
 One murmuring shell he gathers from the sand,—  
 One little heart-flame sheltered in his hand.  
 Yet through thine eyes he grants me clearest call  
 And veriest touch of powers primordial  
 That any hour-girt life may understand.

So in Sonnet XXXVI, after the death of the first love, he finds the mystical quality of Love revealed through a new woman, and in Sonnet XXXVII, when Love charges him with inconsistency, he replies that only by this new attachment can Love's own worship be fulfilled. The new love, unlike the old, is secret, difficult, with the suggestion of the forbidden hanging over it. Yet the longings caused by this new love lead to some of the most poignant poems in the sequence :

What of her glass without her ? The blank grey  
 There where the pool is blind of the moon's face.  
 Her dress without her ? The tossed empty space  
 Of cloud-rack whence the moon has passed away.

Her paths without her ? Day's appointed sway  
 Usurped by desolate night. Her pillowed place  
 Without her ? Tears, ah me ! for love's good grace,  
 And cold forgetfulness of night or day.

What of the heart without her ? Nay, poor heart,  
 Of thee what word remains ere speech be still ?  
 A wayfarer by barren ways and chill,  
 Steep ways and weary, without her thou art,  
 Where the long cloud, the long wood's counterpart,  
 Sheds doubled darkness up the labouring hill.

In Part II he surveys life, and particularly his own life, and reveals a sense of lost purposes and of futile and delayed endeavour :

So it happeneth  
 When Work and Will awake too late, to gaze  
 After their life sailed by, and hold their breath.  
 Ah ! who shall dare to search through what sad maze  
 Thenceforth their incommunicable ways  
 Follow the desultory feet of Death ?

The only hope that underlies life, and that is dimly conceived, a fancy rather than a faith, rests in Beauty and the possibility of reunion with the one that is loved. Despite this centre of despair, the second part contains sonnets of considerable variety and power : *The Monochord*, intelligible only as music is intelligible ; *The Sun's Shame*, a powerful adaptation of Elizabethan mannerism ; the poignant and personal sonnets, *Newborn Death* and *The Hill Summit*, with their richer background of natural landscape than is usual in Rossetti. All that he could reveal of his mind poetically he placed in this sequence and in a few related lyrics such as *Cloud Confines* and *The Stream's Secret*. In *Cloud Confines*, he explored the meaning of life only to leave the matter a question unanswered.<sup>9</sup> In *The Stream's Secret* (1869), a poem written in Ayrshire from a title derived from Bell Scott, he contemplated once again his wife's death. The poem recalls the moods of *The House of Life*, the penetration into those half-lit recesses of his mind, where Love dwells, and Death with her :

Nay, why  
 Name the dead hours ? I mind them well :  
 Their ghosts in many darkened doorways dwell  
 With desolate eyes to know them by.  
 The hour that must be born ere it can die,—  
 Of that I'd have thee tell.

*The House of Life* bridges his early and later poetry. In 1869 he returned to ballad poetry and attempted to adjust two of the great world stories, *Paradise Lost* and the *Iliad*, to the necessities of this form. In *Eden Bower*, Lilith, the snake woman, the first wife of Adam ('Not a drop of her blood was human'), conspires with the snake to undo Adam and Eve. Much of the poem is her account of the Fall, and of her revenge. Rossetti had been attracted by the Lilith legend in Goethe,<sup>10</sup> and had employed it in *The House of Life*. Here he uses Lilith's figure to portray the whole fate of Adam and Eve from a fresh standpoint. Lilith's imagery serves to give unity to her narrative :

O and Lilith was queen of Adam !

(*Sing Eden Bower !*)

All the day and the night together

My breath could shake his soul like a feather.

Rossetti seldom wrote more simply and effectively ; he reduced a large theme to the brief allusive phrases of Lilith's speech and yet retained in her an intensity of passion. In *Troy Town* (1869), the most subtle of the ballads, he contracts the whole of the epic theme to a prayer of Helen's made in dedicating to Venus a cup fashioned in the shape of her breast. One cannot deny the laden sensuality of this poem, but this should not obscure its technical perfection. Rossetti considered it among the best of his poems. Its swift movement, its prophetic refrain full of foreboding, and an imagery as exotic as that of the Song of Songs, serve to unite in this poem a number of Rossetti's dominant qualities conveyed with mature craftsmanship. In *Stratton Water* (1854, revised 1869), he sets aside these individual purposes in order to achieve ballad imitation in theme and form. The effects are broader, and the theme lucidly conveyed, but the story of Lord Sands and of Janet who believed him unfaithful, and of their marriage in the kirk with its flooded kirk-yard, lacks the complete seriousness and sincerity of Rossetti's more individual poems. The adherence to the traditional form and vocabulary, while it has increased clarity, has eliminated the tortuous and yet powerful quality of his mind. In his last years he returned in *The White Ship*

(1878-1880) and *The King's Tragedy* (1881) to this simpler ballad method. In these poems, the product of the lucid intervals of a man ridden with ill-health and mental distress, he seems to disengage himself from the motives of his earlier poetry and find freedom in clear narration. The story of the death of Henry I's son, which he re-tells in *The White Ship*, had long been known to him, while his interest in the theme of *The King's Tragedy*, the death of James I of Scotland, arose from Bell Scott's affection for *The King's Quair*. Neither poem is disturbed by the ballad mimicry which frets the poetic sincerity of *Stratton Water*, yet they both possess a simplicity like that found in William Morris. Ballad poetry has affected English romanticism in many ways, and Rossetti makes an individual contribution: he begins his poetry in the ballad, later he impregnates it with his own purposes, and then at last, when with the increase of physical disability he loses contact with his earlier poetic motives, he reveals himself in the ballad as a narrative writer, with action and pathos and tragedy equally under his control.

Closely related to his ballads is *Rose Mary* (1869), the most complex of Rossetti's narratives, told in five-line stanzas with strophic choruses, dividing the three parts. The theme is ballad material united to Rossetti's own interest in spiritualism. He had heard of the 'dreaming stone' of Dr. Dee, the sixteenth-century astrologer,<sup>11</sup> and so in ballad setting he imagines a girl gazing at a beryl stone of her mother's to see if any danger faces her lover. None but the pure can glimpse the message of the stone, and the girl, no longer a maid, fails to see the danger that faces her knight. In the second part, after a strophic interlude by the spirits of the stone, the knight is brought in dead, and on his person the girl's mother discovers letters written by another woman. In the third part, Rose Mary breaks the beryl stone with her father's sword, releases its evil spirits, and so brings destruction upon herself. She dies feeling that she is returning to her knight. This poem, so compact and moving, loses only in the inadequacy of its final crisis and in its technical over-elaboration. Rossetti's addition of the strophic beryl songs serves to make intricate a narrative which is already overstrained with circumstance. Yet in its mixture of magic and human motive it possesses an unusual

power, not unlike that of *The Ancient Mariner*, but with a suggestion that the poetic purpose was never fully envisioned, or at least never completely revealed.

The limitations of Rossetti's poetry have frequently been defined: his imperfect rhymes, prosodic licences, tortured vocabulary, the absence of natural landscape or normal human interest, the rejection of faith, and of all ethical or social preoccupations. He seems to stand in between the poetic philosophy of Keats and that of the eighteen-nineties; he has lost many of the generous impulses which strengthened Keats's conception of Beauty, while his contacts are wider than those of some of the lyrists who follow him at the close of the century. Many of his limitations can be recognized and admitted, and yet it cannot be denied that his influence gave poetry a new direction in the later nineteenth century. If his vocabulary is difficult, he cannot at least be accused of carelessness: his letters are filled with minute discussion of alternative phrasings, and he revised his work continuously. The integrity of his art lies in the fact that there arises from his most individual poems a single image: Love dimly shrined; Life wreathing flowers for Death to wear and 'darkness and the breath of space, Like loud waters everywhere'. Victorian romanticism is marked by its narrowing content, and Rossetti contributes to that close resifting of the material thought suitable for poetry. Even if his art was esoteric he served by his whole life to emphasize the importance of art in a society that was alien to such a faith. Much of his active life was occupied with painting, and that art enters frequently into his poetry; he writes of pictures and further allows his vivid visual powers to colour his poetic imagery. But he valued his poetry for its own sake and strove to bring perfection to its form and phrasing.

<sup>1</sup> The main authority is W. M. Rossetti, though he states frankly that he is not prepared to reveal the whole truth about his brother; *Dante Gabriel Rossetti as Designer and Writer* (1889); *D. G. Rossetti, his Family Letters, with a Memoir*, 2 vols. (1895); *Pre-Raphaelite Diaries and Letters* (1900); *Rossetti Papers (1862-1870)* (1903); and valuable information in the preface and notes to *The Works of D. G. Rossetti* (1911); see also references to W. M. Rossetti under C. G. Rossetti. Other lives have been issued: William Sharp's (1882) is an

undertaker's' biography, but it has some interesting critical judgments; A. C. Benson (1904) combines biography and criticism; a later and much more effective biographical estimate is *Rossetti*, Evelyn Waugh (1928); R. L. Mégroz in *D. G. Rossetti* (1928) has a full critical estimate. See also *The Rossetti Family (1824-1854)*, Ross D. Waller (1932), and *The Wife of Rossetti*, Violet Hunt (1932). D. G. Rossetti's letters have not yet been collected; some have been issued in the memoirs mentioned above, others can be found in *Letters of D. G. Rossetti to W. Allingham (1854-1876)*, ed. G. B. Hill (1897) and *The Letters of D. G. Rossetti to F. S. Ellis*, ed. Oswald Doughty (1928); many remain unpublished. The best general essays are still Walter Pater's essay in *Appreciations* (1889) and A. C. Swinburne's *The Poems of Dante Gabriel Rossetti in Essays and Studies* (1875); single aspects of Rossetti's personality and work have been studied by Sir Thomas Hall Caine, *Recollections* (1928), and by H. T. Dunn, *Recollections* (1904); Dunn is unreliable, but he knew Rossetti and was one of his assistants. L. A. Willoughby in *D. G. Rossetti and German Literature* (1912) makes a full correlation of Rossetti's German reading and his poetical achievement. Other suggestive studies are: *Un Italien d'Angleterre*, Henri Dupré (1921); *Pre-Raphaelite and Other Poets*, Lafcadio Hearn (1923). Much information on the poems can be gained from volumes 4, 8, 9, and 10, of *The Catalogue of the Ashley Library*, T. J. Wise.

On Pre-Raphaelitism, apart from the above volumes, the most useful works are *Autobiographical Notes*, W. B. Scott (ed. W. Minto), 2 vols. (1892); *Memorials of Edward Burne-Jones* (1912); *Ruskin, Rossetti; Pre-Raphaelitism*, edited W. M. Rossetti (1899); *Rossetti*, Ford Madox Hueffer (1902). On Rossetti's relationships with William Morris, see *The Life of William Morris*, J. W. Mackail, 2 vols. (1899). Max Beerbohm's cartoons *Rossetti and his Circle* (1922), are most revealing. A discriminating account of the movement in its literary aspects will be found in *The Victorian Romantics (1850-1870)*, T. Earle Welby (1929).

2. See *Gabriele Rossetti*, a versified autobiography, translated and supplemented by W. M. Rossetti (1901); and refs. in 1 above.

3. *Ruskin, Rossetti and Pre-Raphaelitism*, W. M. Rossetti (1899).

4. *Memoir* (1895), vol. I, p. 135.

5. *Century Guild Hobby Horse* (1887).

6. R. D. Waller, *Modern Language Review* (April 1931).

7. *Die älteste Fassung von D. G. Rossetti's Ballade Sister Helen*, Max Foerster (Leipzig, 1929).

8. *The House of Life*, P. F. Baum (Cambridge, Mass. 1928).

9. W. Sharp, *Rossetti* (1882), maintains that this poem arose from Meredith's *In the Woods*.

10. See Willoughby, loc. cit. in 1, p. 27.

11. Such at least is the evidence of Dunn, loc. cit. in 1.



## CHAPTER II

### ALGERNON CHARLES SWINBURNE

**A**ROUND the personality of Algernon Charles Swinburne <sup>1</sup> (1837-1909) literary critics have been as restless and tormenting as a pack of midges. Vaguely sensing a legend in his life, they fail to determine what that legend shall be. He cannot be converted into a hero, as can Shelley ; his very appearance is too incongruous for that, and Sir Edmund Gosse has enforced the impression of that incongruity very clearly upon us :<sup>2</sup> ' In the case of Swinburne the physical strangeness exceeded, perhaps, that of any other entirely sane man of imaginative genius whose characteristics have been preserved for us.' The physical description runs into caricature, and yet the mind housed in this strange body was one to which many personalities, such as Ruskin, not obviously sympathetic, paid a tribute of profound respect. When the social reformer, J. M. Ludlow, wished to lead a prosecution against Swinburne for the publication of *Poems and Ballads* he received from Ruskin a rebuke that must have surprised him : ' Swinburne is infinitely above me in all knowledge and power, and I should no more think of advising him and criticizing him than of venturing to do it to Turner if he were alive again.'

It was through this figure that the public first gained cognizance of the changed values in the poetry of the century. Rossetti, Meredith, and Morris had published work before him ; they were quietly ignored. Christina Rossetti was awarded a genial reception in 1862, but around her no stormy controversies arose. Swinburne by the brilliance and violence of his *Poems and Ballads* made the year 1866 a turning-point in poetical history. Nothing was quite the same after that.

He was of a pure English tradition and of noble family ; his father was Admiral Charles Henry Swinburne and his mother was a daughter of the Earl of Ashburnham. Hampshire, Northumberland, and a little of London, where by an accident of residence he was born, were the background of his childhood.

He enjoyed Nature, the life of the country and the sea. Both father and mother contributed to the education of this child, born all but dead, and certainly not expected to live an hour. His father, who remained throughout life attached to the 'afflictive phenomenon' of a son, swam with him in the sea and awakened in him a lasting passion for that least restrictive of elements; and from his mother he gained early a knowledge of French and Italian, and her tact prevented any permanent breach between him and his family. He entered Eton in 1849 when he was twelve; he left, a little precipitately, in 1853. His temperament kept him outside the normal life of a public school, and his courage prevented him from suffering for his independence. Those who knew realized that there was 'something a little formidable about him', and those less sympathetic thought him 'a horrid little boy, with a big red head and pasty complexion, who looked as though a course of physical exercise would have done him good'.<sup>3</sup> His leisure was well occupied. He was to become one of the most widely-read poets of his age, and already he was consuming the work of the romantics and eighteenth century poets, some of the Elizabethans, with Greek poetry and a few of the Latins, including Ovid and Catullus. Byron he had promised his mother not to read. In 1851, when Queen Victoria visited Eton, he wrote a poem in the manner of Pope, *The Triumph of Gloriana*, to celebrate the visit. The satirist could embroider the incident, but it shall pass.

In 1856 he entered Balliol College, Oxford, and though he paid but limited attention to prescribed studies he read widely; he continued with the poets he had known at Eton, and Byron was no longer excluded. He went farther afield in verse and prose, studying *Wuthering Heights*, *Aurora Leigh*, and less-known works which were to exercise an influence over him, Charles Wells's *Joseph and His Brethren* and Beddoes's *Death's Jest Book*. During the late autumn of 1857 he met the group of Pre-Raphaelites who were invading Oxford to cover with frescoes the walls of the Union Debating Hall, and later Rossetti, Morris, and Burne-Jones were all to become his friends. Morris's early poetry was the most immediate influence upon him, but the verse and personality of Rossetti were destined to leave a more permanent impression. He had

friends of his own generation in a group of brilliant undergraduates who, led by a young Scot, John Nichol, called themselves the ' Old Mortality ' and met mainly to discuss literature and philosophy and to engender conviviality. Nichol introduced him to those republican enthusiasms, a hatred of Napoleon III and a love of Mazzini, which were to appear as motives in his poetry. During the later years at Oxford he came under the influence of Benjamin Jowett, then Professor of Greek ; it was strange how some mutual regard and even respect was to grow up between dignity and what must have appeared to dignity as impudence. A love of Greek literature was one of their common bonds, and through Jowett's assistance Swinburne was to continue his Greek studies with an enthusiasm that had its creative effect in *Atlanta in Calydon* and *Erechtheus*. Oxford had given him much, but he did not prove himself very grateful, and his conduct was sufficiently unsatisfactory for him to be sent away in 1859 to study with William Stubbs at Navestock, and later, in 1860, he was ' rusticated and all but expelled '. He left hating Oxford, but not the friends whom he had found there. Ten years later he was welcoming the Master of Balliol as a guest in his father's house.

The record of Swinburne's life from 1860 to his death is different from that of other men. He formed no ties beyond those of friendship ; he had no responsibilities beyond that of looking after himself, and this he failed to do very well. It is usual to note in that life two periods ; both of them lack normality. In the first he is like some gaudy bird flaunting its plumage in the drab, foggy air of London, and then he is a bird caged, content to be caged and fed, knowing that his freedom in a strange environment could not continue indefinitely. The first period extends from 1860 to 1879. His main centre is London, though he has to flee at times to recuperate his health in the country. It is a period meagre in outward event, but crowded with emotional and intellectual experience. In 1862 the rejection of his love for Miss Jane Simon moved him profoundly, and led him in 1863 to write one of his few personal poems, the magnificent *The Triumph of Time*. He formed new friendships of deep influence. Monckton Milnes (afterwards Lord Houghton), a man of fifty, a traveller, who had known the world of diplomacy and politics and savoured the fashionable

life of half a dozen capitals, welcomed Swinburne to his estate at Fryston. Whatever else Monckton Milnes gave Swinburne he opened up to him the library at Fryston, and it was no ordinary library. Milnes, the discreet editor of Keats, had among his private treasures a collection of erotica unparalleled perhaps in Europe.<sup>4</sup> Most especially attractive to Swinburne was a comprehensive collection of sadistic literature. The hours in the library of Fryston gave Swinburne a strong source of suggestion for the crucial period of his creative work. It is difficult to know to what extent the febrile excitement aroused in his mind penetrated into the conduct of his life. M. Lafourcade has enumerated all the acquaintances who might have encouraged him to an unbalanced life, from Burton, the orientalist and adventurer, to others equally Rabelaisian but of more dubious literary worth. He retained contact with Rossetti and met George Meredith, but an attempt of the three to form a joint *ménage* should have shown Swinburne and Meredith<sup>5</sup> that their temperaments were too diverse for companionship. Apart from friendships, Swinburne formed literary adorations, which persisted with him throughout his life, and gave a wan stimulus to his later poetry. Among the objects of this hero-worship were Victor Hugo, Baudelaire, Walter Savage Landor, Mazzini and Walt Whitman, whom later he was to dethrone amid a storm of vituperation. This period (1860-1879) is the crucial period of Swinburne's poetic creation; its crisis lies in the years 1862-1866. The poetical volumes published in those years are: *The Queen Mother and Rosamond* (1860); *Atalanta in Calydon* (1865, April); *Chastelard* (1865); *Poems and Ballads* (1866); *A Song of Italy* (1867); *Songs before Sunrise* (1871); *Bothwell* (1874); *Songs of Two Nations* (1875); *Erechtheus* (1876); *Poems and Ballads (Second Series)* (1878). Apart from this poetical work, Swinburne commenced, in this period, critical work in prose. He was a contributor to *The Spectator* from 1862, and to *The Fortnightly* from 1867; in 1868 appeared his study of *William Blake*, important as a revelation of his own early aesthetic position. In 1875 he published *George Chapman*, one of his early studies of Elizabethan drama. He produced also a large amount of unpublished work, including the prose romance *Lesbia Brandon*.

The second period of Swinburne's life (1879-1909) has been

the subject of considerable controversy. There emerges the figure of Theodore Watts, known later as Theodore Watts-Dunton, a lawyer of St. Ives, who had helped a number of the Pre-Raphaelites in their legal difficulties. Business relationships ripened into friendship, so that, when in 1878-1879 Swinburne's health was lacerated by the life he was leading and no appeal of friends or family could move him, Watts-Dunton took him first to his own rooms, and then in September 1879 to 'The Pines', in Putney, a house he had taken for their joint tenure. The bird was caged, but he would have died had it been otherwise. This joint *ménage* at 'The Pines' has been often described; the late rising; the regular morning walk; lunch at 1.30 p.m.; a siesta from 2.30 to 4.30, work until dinner, and after dinner a reading from Dickens's novels with Theodore, and then work and reading until midnight. There were visits abroad and at home, and there were friends, but Watts-Dunton supervised all with an anxious eye. Gosse expresses soberly what has been often expressed satirically when he describes Swinburne's life at 'The Pines' as 'an existence of the greatest calm, passivity and resignation, without a struggle and apparently without a wish for liberty of action'. To affirm that Swinburne's work is less spirited during these last decades is merely to record a fact, but to suggest that Watts-Dunton stifled the fire of Swinburne's spirit is to suggest something less than a half truth. The crisis in Swinburne's emotional and creative life had passed before he entered 'The Pines', and had not Watts-Dunton nursed him back to health in 1879 it is probable that we should have to record his death year as 1880 and not as 1909. These last thirty years of Swinburne's life were years of great industry; the record of volumes is the impressive evidence of his activity. In poetry, *Songs of the Springtides* (1880); *Studies in Song* (1880); *The Heptalogia* (a volume of parodies, published anonymously) (1880); *Mary Stuart* (1881); *Tristram of Lyonesse* (1882); *A Century of Roundels* (1883); *A Midsummer Holiday* (1884); *Marino Faliero* (1885); *Locrine* (1887); *Poems and Ballads (Third Series)* (1889); *The Sisters* (1892); *Astrophel* (1894); *The Tale of Balen* (1896); *Rosamund, Queen of the Lombards* (1899); *A Channel Passage and other Poems* (1904); *The Duke of Gandia* (1908). Apart from poetry the period is

rich in the production of critical work, including studies of Shakespeare (1880), Victor Hugo (1886); Ben Jonson (1889), and Charles Dickens (posthumously published in 1913), and shorter studies of many Elizabethan dramatists and of nineteenth century writers.

It is essential to separate the history of Swinburne's mind from the biography of his daily life. His mental development shows a consistency, a positive, virile quality which finds no counterpart in the timid negations of his practical existence. From his boyhood days at Eton to the closing years at Putney he pursued literature with the same enthusiasm, the same scholarly methods of precise, effective reading. His creative mind impinges at different periods with varying effect upon these accumulated resources of mental activity, yet even when creation is sluggish or lies dormant the passion for literature, the sanest and most prolonged passion of Swinburne's mind, is ever awake. The study of Swinburne must begin with Swinburne's studies. It reveals him as one of the best-read poets of his age, a writer whose letters are full of references to books and the problems that arise in them, whose friendships were, as the years went on, increasingly literary friendships. It is true that in the middle period political figures intrude, but even here the men from the world of activity are chosen, in part at least, as illustrations of general precepts of liberty, which he has found in his Greek reading.

Swinburne's creative work reached its imaginative definition in the crisis which preceded *Atalanta in Calydon* of 1865. The growth of his poetic mind lies in the long years of experiment which anticipates that crisis. This can be more clearly realized now that his early, previously unpublished work has been printed.<sup>6</sup> The early period, whatever may be the intrinsic merits of the work produced, has therefore an importance in the outline of his poetic development. He remained to the end an admirer of work very different from his own; he began in experiments which diverged widely from the work he was later to produce. In Eton, we have already seen his attempt to write a poem in the couplets of Pope, *The Triumph of Gloriana* (1851):

Here humble shepherds purer pleasures know  
Than what your gay resplendent courts bestow.

At Oxford the most important influence was that of the Pre-Raphaelites. He conceived a deep admiration for the early verse of William Morris: this led him during the period 1857-1860 to write a number of closely imitative poems. The unfinished *Queen Yseult* is the most considerable; the theme shows an early interest in the medieval legend which was to occupy him so considerably in later life, the stanza and rhythm are an exact memory of Morris's *'Twas in Church on Palm Sunday*. It is difficult to compare *Queen Yseult*, which has the direct simplicity of a ballad, with the massy and grandiose form of the later *Tristram of Lyonesse*: the earlier poem is more successful within its range; the narrative breathes naturally from the verse; the values of the legend are delicately perceived, and the imagery has a keen visual clarity which is not found in the later work:

Sidelong to him crept she close,  
Pale as any winter rose  
When the air is grey with snows.

Prosodically the firmness and economy of the verse are sustained throughout. The rhythmical movement, which Morris discovered, has been matched and perhaps surpassed, but it is the same movement not only in its general form but in the devices of rhyme and pause:

Then he thought him, lying there,  
Of Queen Yseult's golden hair  
And the brows of Guinevere.

In verbal detail the poem is threaded through with Pre-Raphaelite device, and there is a recurrent insistence that Queen Yseult, like the Blessed Damozel, has 'corn-ripe golden hair'. A number of other pieces<sup>7</sup> show similar affinities, with a predominant interest in Arthurian scenes.

While a Pre-Raphaelite influence is supreme in the Oxford period, it does not stand alone. In 1860 Swinburne wrote an unsuccessful prize poem on *The Death of Sir John Franklin*, where the accent of Pre-Raphaelite poetry is modified by memories of Elizabethan dramatic verse. As the piece is an occasioned one it is not strange that the two predominant

influences on Swinburne's mind should enter equally. Alongside such obviously Pre-Raphaelite lines as :

Is this the end ? is praise so light a thing  
As rumour unto rumour tendereth.

Elizabethan effects occur :

There is no nobler word  
In the large writing and scored marge of time.

Nor is the Elizabethan influence confined to prosody, for Swinburne has contrived successfully to express a sombre pleasure in the tragic endurance of brave men :

Like those dead seamen of Elizabeth  
And those who wrought with Nelson or with Blake,

and from this he approaches a mood of chastened praise of England :

Because the gift they had of English breath  
They did give back to England for her sake.

From his childhood days a further powerful and permanent influence had been working upon him. He had heard Northumbrian ballads in and around his father's home, and these he had supplemented with early reading in Scott and in other collections. His contact with Rossetti and Morris had shown him how two of his contemporaries were manipulating ballad poetry for their own purposes, and so from 1859-1861 his interest in the form was strongly reawakened. He studied ballad collections assiduously, with the intention of publishing a collection. He formed his own versions from variants and developed an unusual skill in adding stanzas and phrases, so conformable to the originals that they did not obviously betray a modern hand. From this background he proceeded to construct original ballads, borrowing the suggestion of theme or phrase from some old poem.<sup>8</sup> Some of these he reprinted later in *Poems and Ballads* (1866, 1878, 1889). Lafourcade has noted that the ballad themes which attract him are all of love, frequently of love that ends in tragedy and in crimes which



arise from passion. After 1861 ballad imitation becomes submerged, but the vocabulary and prosodic effects of ballad poetry remain a permanent influence.

An additional creative stimulus he derived from the poetry of Keats. It is to be seen most clearly in an unfinished piece on the *Hyperion* theme, and the numerous verbal resemblances show that at this period Swinburne studied closely a poet whom, later, under Arnold's influence, he was to misprize. Keats had always been a favourite of the Pre-Raphaelites; they and their associates had helped to establish his growing reputation in the nineteenth century, while he had affinities with Swinburne's own mind both in aesthetic theory and in a common enthusiasm for Elizabethan work. Further, Swinburne was already extracting from Emily Brontë's poems that fierce yet melancholy defiance of fate which later developed into his personal approach to life. Amid all this poetic experiment Pre-Raphaelite and Elizabethan elements were combating for supremacy in his mind, and the Elizabethans conquered. In 1860 he produced two dramas, published together, *The Queen Mother* and *Rosamond*.

*Rosamond* is an experiment in dramatic blank verse. Swinburne fought for success in this piece, revising his work with persistence. The resulting verse is competent but without definitely marked characteristics, except that in a few unswept corners memories of Browning and Rossetti have remained. In later years<sup>9</sup> Swinburne spoke contemptuously of *Rosamond*, particularly of its defects of dramatic construction. As a drama it has obvious deficiencies, but his own criticisms have told too heavily against its value as a poem. The story of Rosamond, the mistress of Henry II, and her death at the jealous hand of Eleanor is known to ballad literature, and had been re-told by Samuel Daniel in *The Complaint of Rosamond* and by Drayton in *Heroical Epistles*. It was a favourite theme with the Pre-Raphaelites: both Rossetti and Burne-Jones had chosen Rosamond as themes for paintings. Whatever Swinburne's defects in *Rosamond*, he has portrayed a beautiful, pathetic woman, in whom love is inevitable, and for whom pain is bound close to love; as a nun shuts out all that may lead her to love, so Rosamond has shut out all that may hinder it. Swinburne has further achieved success in the concluding conflict

of Rosamond and Eleanor, which culminates in Rosamond's death and the king's intervention. As a play *Rosamond* may be unactable, but as a poem it has incidents and lines of marked distinction.

*The Queen Mother*, a blank-verse drama, composed during 1859-1860, is the work in which Swinburne closes his period of tutelage. More elaborate in movement than *Rosamond* it attempts to interlock two themes in a single dramatic action. The massacre of St. Bartholomew's Eve planned by Catherine de Medici is the culmination of the public political action, while the private intrigue centres in the love of Catherine's son, Charles IX, for Denise de Maulévrier. The union of the actions is gained in the personality and tragic story of Denise, a maiden of a dissolute Court, trained to the intricacies of refined sensuality, and yet so revolted by the whisper of the slaughter of St. Bartholomew's Eve that life and the pleasure of love, and the person of the king, her lover, are bitterness to her. She is an intricate personality, incompletely realized, and yet rising to strength in the closing scenes. As sources for this play Swinburne studied not only Brantôme but Merimée's *Chronique du règne de Charles IX* and Dumas' *La Reine Margot*.<sup>10</sup> In style *The Queen Mother* is full of gestures adapted from Elizabethan drama; the phrases seem imitated at times, rather than imaginatively reconceived. The memories are not as worthy or illuminated as the Elizabethan lines which they recall. Swinburne retains the splendid movement of Elizabethan imagery, but the splendour occasionally gives way to the confusion in such lines as :

I will not do it ;  
Lest all that regiment of muffled years  
Now huddled in the rear and skirts of time  
I must walk through, take whips into their hands  
To bruise my shame withal.

Swinburne did not gain much critical encouragement with these two dramas. *The Athenæum* wrote :

We should have conceived it hardly possible to make the crimes of Catherine de Medici dull, howsoever they are presented. Mr. Swinburne, however, has done so. There is more of real drama in Mr. Browning's short poem of the French poisoner in

the laboratory than in the entire hundred and fifty pages here wearily spun off. Having had such ill-luck with one wicked Queen, we were unable to cope with a second one ; and thus the Tragedy of Woodstock, once again told, though shorter as a play, is gladly handed over to others who are disposed to venture into the labyrinth.

For five years Swinburne published nothing of importance, and yet that period (1860-1865) was the emotional crisis of his life. Publication when it came was plentiful and varied : *Atalanta in Calydon* (1865, April), a Greek lyrical drama to be followed later by *Erechtheus* in 1876 ; *Chastelard* (1865), the first of his trilogy of plays on the life of Mary Stuart ; finally *Poems and Ballads* (1866, August), the first volume of his lyrical poetry. Instead of examining Swinburne's poetry in strictly chronological order it has been found preferable to discuss separately each of the three genres which he practised—drama, lyric drama, and lyric. Such a method, whatever it may lack, serves to show the mental persistence of Swinburne, his power of grappling with large things in poetry, and it emphasizes that his work as a writer of poetic drama cannot be ignored in the brilliant fanfare of his lyrical verse.

*Chastelard* was published in November 1865, seven months after *Atalanta in Calydon*, but the piece was begun at Oxford in 1860 and completed before *Atalanta* was commenced. Swinburne's dramas have so often been condemned unread that it has been thought advisable to give a narrative as well as a critical account of their content. *Chastelard* opens with the return of Mary Stuart from France to Scotland. She is in marriage negotiations with Lord Darnley, leader of the Scottish Catholics and a claimant after Mary to Elizabeth's throne. In her retinue is Chastelard, a French poet who loves her and is loved by her. Chastelard persuades Mary Beaton, one of the Queen's ladies whom he has once loved, to bring him secretly to the Queen. Instead Mary Beaton impersonates the Queen ; the two are discovered and the news of Chastelard's treachery is borne to the Queen. In impulsive anger and grief she announces her betrothal to Darnley. Mary Beaton, held thrall to Chastelard's influence, introduces him to a hidden place in the Queen's chamber. The Queen yields to his love in a mood that is compounded of pain and overwrought passion. She

and Chastelard are thus discovered by Darnley, and Chastelard made prisoner. The climax is reached in the intrigue, and from now to the end the play resolves itself into a study of the Queen's character. In the fourth act she dangles with the life of Chastelard, now in an ecstasy of perverse cruelty wishing him dead, and now turning her thoughts towards pardon. Finally after an interview with Darnley she signs his release. Chastelard in the fifth act refuses to accept the pardon. He has a painful talk with Mary Beaton, who loves him with a passion that frets and sickens her. The Queen visits him ; she and Chastelard enter once again into a mood of passion. In the last scenes, which have a Greek economy of control, the waiting maids, with Mary Beaton among them, watch the execution of Chastelard from a balcony window.

Swinburne's achievement in this drama has been frequently underestimated. Drawing the main narrative from Brantôme he has handled the historical material freely and yet honestly. He creates the character of Mary Beaton, deriving suggestions possibly from Hugo's *Marie Tudor*, and elaborates and remodels Chastelard to meet his dramatic purpose. The modifications of historical incident, the antedating of the Darnley marriage, and the reprieve of Chastelard are done with full knowledge and for clearly defined dramatic purposes. The setting of the scenes has a cunning dramatic skill. The play opens in the upper chamber in Holyrood, with Mary Beaton singing a French lyric and with the other maidens around her ; the conclusion is the same scene, but Chastelard's death is watched through the casement. Similarly the verse, apart from beauties that are detached and lyrical, has frequent dramatic gesture, a mastery that Swinburne gained from his study of the Elizabethan verse. Such, for instance, is the description of John Knox :

That is Master Knox.

He carries all these folk within his skin,  
Bound up as 'twere between the brows of him  
Like a bad thought.

The tragedy of Chastelard is so manipulated that it is Fate's prelude to the greater tragedy of the Queen. The dramatic irony of *Chastelard* is only apparent when the whole trilogy has been read. Thus Chastelard says to the Queen :

I made this yesterday ;  
 For its love's sake I pray you let it live.  
 'Après tant de jours, après tant de pleurs,  
 Soyez secourable à mon âme en peine.'

It is this very song that Mary Beaton sings shortly before the Queen's execution, and after the song the Queen speaks :

Nay, I should once have known that song, thou say'st,  
 And him that sang it and should now be dead :  
 Was it—but his rang sweeter—was it not  
 Remy Belleau ?

Incidents could be multiplied to show Swinburne's cunning in the dramatic apart from the poetical aspect of his work. The main difficulty of the play, as its earliest critics detected, lies in the person of the Queen herself. She has passion alternating with cruel, calculating coldness ; she knows neither gentleness nor affection. At times the sadistic conceptions of love, found so clearly in *Poems and Ballads*, seem to govern her actions, and she appears fickle and ambitious, possessed of a flame, illuminating, destructive, and soon dead. Chastelard understands her well when he says :

I know her ways of loving, all of them ;  
 A sweet soft way the first is ; afterward  
 It burns and bites like fire ; the end of that,  
 Charred dust, and eyelids bitten through with smoke ;

and later he tells the Queen :

I know not : men must love you in life's spite ;  
 For you will always kill them ; man by man  
 Your lips will bite them dead.

The passion revealed is a perverted one, and she is its victim. Judged morally she is a heartless wanton, and it is thus that she has been most frequently judged, and the unnaturalness of her conduct has led to an underestimate of the outstanding positive qualities of the play.

*Chastelard* is a manageable romantic tragedy ; *Bothwell* (1871-1874) is gargantuan in comparison. An early reviewer, attempting to describe its length, wrote that it 'had about as

many lines as *Hamlet* supplemented by *Paradise Lost*'. It is simpler to consider each act as a separate play, and Swinburne himself by giving each a different title would seem to suggest this method. The length of *Bothwell* is due in part to Swinburne's modifications of his conception of historical drama, for he attempts to incorporate something of both epical and chronicle method. Still more is it due to his methods of manipulating his sources. It has now been shown by Mr. E. F. James <sup>10</sup> that Swinburne was mainly dependent in his Mary Stuart plays on Froude's *The History of England from the Fall of Wolsey*. Froude began publishing his history in 1856 and the last volume appeared in 1870. Swinburne's method as he progressed in his work was increasingly to versify Froude. He saw in Froude his Plutarch, but instead of using him as Shakespeare had used his original, Swinburne came to turn morsels of Froude into verse, and frequently lost all conception of the relationship of these isolated fragments to any organic and dramatic unity. As he progressed in his work between 1871-1881 he studied more widely in the large Mary Stuart literature, and increased knowledge of historical detail seems only to have added to his difficulties as a dramatist.

*Bothwell* thus lacks the clearly-etched outline of intrigue which *Chastelard* possesses. No longer is Swinburne content with the loves of the Queen: he enters into the worlds of politics and history to show the form and pressure of Mary's mind. The only unity of structure that is easily discoverable lies in his determination that each act must culminate in a dramatically effective crisis. Act i, Rizzio (March 9, 1566), portrays the uneasy passage of Mary's married life with Darnley. Darnley, morbidly jealous of his Queen, ambitious and yet cowardly, has grown 'doubtful and evil-eyed against himself', while Mary's position towards the nobles is weakened by the fact that her husband is a Catholic. She has already recalled Lord Bothwell to strengthen her position, and she is driven back for counsel upon her Italian secretary, Rizzio. Swinburne develops no intrigue between the Queen and her adviser: they are friends in affection and in policy, but no more. Darnley, with some associated nobles, conceives a plot against Rizzio, who is, further, unpopular with the people, led by John Knox, and the culminating scene of this act is the

murder of the secretary in the presence of the Queen. The act is clogged with historical detail, and possesses no human conflict until its movement is clarified in the last scene. Here Mary shows her queenliness as the nobles surround her and Rizzio lies dead at her feet. The turgid blank verse in the earlier scenes is replaced by the lucid simplicity of Mary's plea against the injustice that has been done to her :

What have I done ?  
 What thing am I that ye should use me thus ?  
 O miserable and desertless that I am,  
 Unkingdomed of mine honour !

The clue to the second act, Bothwell (March 10, 1566 to February 9, 1567), is to be found at the close of Act i, where the Queen says :

I am content.  
 Now must I study how to be revenged.

The second act, surely the longest in dramatic literature, shows within its twenty-one scenes how that revenge is accomplished. The earlier scenes are again slow, heavy-moving masses of political incident and intrigue re-expressed in blank verse. The verse is never incompetent ; lines of rare excellence shine through even the dullest passages, but this competence in the verse seems to emphasize the undramatic qualities of the scenes, and there is a wanton absence of action. All this changes with the concluding scenes. Scene 17, where Darnley is shown completely unmanned by the death which he believes awaits him, is one of the finest in the trilogy. Mary adds to his terror by entering his chamber on the night before his murder and singing the song that Rizzio was singing before his death. The culminating scene of this act displays a dramatic economy which Swinburne, at his best, possesses. Darnley's murder is not shown, but the mental torture of the hours before death are revealed with as much emphasis on the horror of a captured and terrified soul as is found in Browning's study of Guido in *The Ring and the Book*.

From Act iii to the end more continuity is apparent. Swinburne named the acts : Act iii, Jane Gordon (February 10 to June 11, 1567) ; Act iv, John Knox (June 15 and 16, 1567) ; Act v, The Queen (July 20, 1567 to May 16, 1568). The time

divisions are more useful than the names, for Jane Gordon appears only incidentally in Act iii, while the Queen is not more obviously the centre of the play in Act v than elsewhere. The theme throughout is the presentation of Mary's harassed life after Darnley's death, the opposition of the nobles, the trial of Bothwell, the divorce of Bothwell from Jane Gordon, his marriage to the Queen, and the multitudinous troubles that pursued the Queen and her reckless lord. The play closes with Mary bidding Scotland farewell :

. . . seven years since  
Did I take leave of my fair land of France,  
My joyous mother, mother of my joy,  
Weeping ; and now with many a woe between  
And space of seven years' darkness, I depart  
From this distempered and unnatural earth  
That casts me out unmothered, and go forth  
On this grey sterile bitter gleaming sea  
With neither tears nor laughter, but a heart  
That from the softest temper of its blood  
Is turned to fire and iron.

These last acts possess a much more clearly defined human conflict than the earlier ones. Mary and Bothwell are pitted against the nobles and against the people led by John Knox. In continual danger, she bears herself as one who finds a sad fascination in distress. Bothwell is ambitious, quick-tongued, an egoist and lawless, yet she finds moments of joy in his love. In the dangerous delight of their love Swinburne finds the clearest portrayal of his heroine. Nowhere does he reduce to so clear a symbol Mary's motive for action as in her soliloquy in Act iv :

I would not lose for many fortunate years  
And empire ringed with smooth security  
The sharp and dangerous draught of this delight  
That out of chance and peril and keen fear  
Springs as the wine out of the trampled grape  
To make this hour sweet to my lips.

Swinburne retains in these gigantesque acts an even level of excellence in the verse, with more subtlety in the portrayal of character than he has previously shown. Not only in his studies of Mary and Bothwell, but even with the minor



characters, the psychological evaluation of motive is cunningly contrived, though great dramatic action is lacking. There are approaches to it but no commanding and developing movement. As in the early acts, there are incidents and speeches of great power : an outstanding instance is the very long speech of John Knox in Act iv, which forms a poetical recapitulation of the whole action. The speech is perhaps Swinburne's greatest achievement apart from his lyrical poetry. The poetry of the acts seems at times to have all the ' air and fire ' of the Elizabethans. Such is the speech of the Queen, who has been confined to Lochleven Castle, to Lady Lochleven in Act v :

I am not tired of that I see not here,  
The sun, and the large air, and the sweet earth  
And the hours that hum like fire-flies on the hills.

Excellencies there are within *Bothwell*, but nothing can quite compensate for its length ; it is like some pathological thing, some diseased monster, blown up and unnatural.

*Mary Stuart* (1881) is the play with which Swinburne brought his trilogy to a close. The time duration, as given by Swinburne, is August 14, 1586 to February 18, 1587. The scene has changed from Scotland to England. We are shown Mary in captivity ; the plots made for her release, and the final decision of Elizabeth to sign her death-warrant. The movement is brisker than in *Bothwell* ; Swinburne has grown content with a method of narration closer to chronicle than to epic. Again he is defeated by the absence of adequate dramatic conflict in the earlier scenes, but this he discovers later in the relationship of Mary and Elizabeth. His brief portrait of the English Queen is effective and sympathetic : at first she is warm-hearted and wishes, if possible, to avoid an execution. Mary's letters to her are penned with pathetic pleas for pardon :

Howe'er she have sinned, what heart were mine, if this  
Drew no tears from me : not the meanest soul  
That lives most miserable but with such words  
Must needs draw down men's pity.

Swinburne, to draw the play to a climax, allows Elizabeth to see the letter that Mary is credited with having written, in

which she details all the gross calumnies that the Duchess of Shrewsbury had spoken to her against the Queen. He rises to dramatic as well as poetic effectiveness in Act iv, Scene 3, where he portrays the change from compassion to anger in Elizabeth when she hears this news. In the final scene Mary Beaton and one other lady watch from a balcony window the death of the Queen, and memories of all the previous crises of the plays come back, the death of Chastelard more particularly, that minor tragedy which had foreshadowed this great doom.

Swinburne's other verse plays are *Marino Faliero* (1885) and *Lochrine* (1887), *The Sisters* (1892), *Rosamund Queen of the Lombards* (1899), *The Duke of Gandia* (1908).

In *Marino*, Swinburne uses for a blank verse drama, political in theme, a figure whom Byron had employed in *The Doge of Venice*. The play is written possibly as a pendant to Swinburne's attack on Byron's dramatic competence. In *Marino* Swinburne re-fashions the *Songs before Sunrise* into a dramatic mould. The result lacks dramatic effectiveness; all has been subordinated to the thought conveyed in such speeches as Faliero's prophecy at the close of the play that liberty will one day arise. Swinburne seems to have realized the dramatic limitation of the play and claims Chapman as a model: 'The fifth act of *Marino Faliero* hopelessly impossible as it is from the point of view of modern stagecraft could hardly have been found too untheatrical, too utterly given over to talk without action by the audiences which endured and applauded the magnificent monotony of Chapman's eloquence.'<sup>9</sup> To this tradition of poetical rhetoric Swinburne subdues the whole action, and the play emerges as a sombre yet powerful prophecy of Mazzini's principles. In *Lochrine*, working on the memory of a play now attributed to Peele, he reverts to legendary Britain for his theme. Here he exercises a barren, technical virtuosity in constructing a dramatic work in varying lyrical stanzas: Petrarchan sonnets, octaves, and even *terza rima* contribute to the prosodic texture of this strange experiment. If *Lochrine* is an experiment in form *The Sisters* is an innovation in theme, and one of even more dubious success. So far Swinburne's drama has obeyed the Shakespearian tradition in basing its fable on some noble, historical theme. Here, in blank-verse drama, he invents a plot of contemporary life, but mingles with

it the trappings of Elizabethan revenge tragedy. The setting is Northumberland and, despite its meagre dramatic value, the play serves to reveal Swinburne's enthusiasm for Nature and for his country of the North. *Rosamund* and *The Duke of Gandia* appear as an attempt of Swinburne in his later years to discipline his lyricism to the purposes of dramatic intrigue. Action recovers its importance, and the characters become distinct figures. The plays remain, however, study pieces, in which competent craftsmanship is uninspired by any urgency of expression or depth of passion.

Swinburne exploited a number of romantic traditions to the exhaustion of their possibilities. Among them was the construction of a verse play unrelated to the stage and relying for its main suggestion upon Elizabethan blank-verse drama. At best it was an artificial practice, though it had produced notable work by Shelley, Byron, and Browning. In the *Mary Stuart* plays he contrived to add qualities that were his own, and in those plays the best of his dramatic work rests. These later experiments, cold, varied, ineffectual, suggest that here, as in many other ways, he was at the end of a tradition. Throughout his dramatic work Swinburne's deficiency had been his willingness to exult in brilliant isolated passages, without attending adequately to dramatic conflict and to unifying motives. His methods of versifying Froude, sometimes in a piecemeal manner, emphasized this amorphous quality in the *Mary Stuart* plays, but it characterizes his work elsewhere. The decline in formal criticism had drawn attention away from the essential organizing singleness of design which any long work demands. In non-dramatic literature such works as Wordsworth's *Excursion* had given models for lengthy products whose merits lie rather in detail than in the central conception. Swinburne himself, with his passion for Lamb's *Selections*, had a keen understanding of Elizabethan blank verse, but it may be questioned whether he ever mastered the dramatic principles of Shakespearian drama.

The plays already mentioned are plays which arise directly or indirectly from Swinburne's study of the Elizabethan drama. Two lyrical dramas owe the main outline of the form to Swinburne's study of Greek tragedy. *Atalanta in Calydon* (1865, April), written during 1863-1865, was the work which first

announced Swinburne as a new force in English poetry. To estimate *Atalanta in Calydon* merely as an imitation of Greek tragedy is to lose most of its virtues. Swinburne certainly realized how far he had deviated from his models. 'It was perhaps,' he writes, 'too exuberant and effusive in its dialogue as it certainly was too irregular in the occasional license of its choral verse.'<sup>9</sup> The play assumes 'the likeness of Greek tragedy', but combines with it a romantic profusion of lyrical verse, and from that combination creates a new form. As he expanded the scheme of the Elizabethan drama into the immense Mary Stuart plays, so his tendency here is to expand: *Atalanta* possesses six episodes and five main choruses, while a Greek play was more restricted in both movements. This inflation in no way impairs Swinburne's poem: it allows him room to develop the lyrical commentary which is the poem's main excellence.

Swinburne had studied the classical sources of his theme; <sup>11</sup> he knew the allusions to the story in Aeschylus and Euripides; he knew Ovid and Apollodorus; while the references to the Jason and Medea story were drawn from Apollonius of Rhodes. The fable is one of the most clearly managed themes that Swinburne manipulated. Althæa, Queen of Calydon, had two brothers Toxeus and Plexippus, and a son Meleager, whose life she could control by a brand which, when thrown into the fire, would cause his death. The goddess Artemis, angered at neglect of her sacrifices, allows a wild boar to enter Calydon, but for her love of the maiden Atalanta she allows it to be slain. Meleager, who loves Atalanta, gives her the spoils, and so angers his uncles that they would attack Atalanta. Meleager slays them. Althæa on hearing of their death throws the brand into the fire and so Meleager dies, nor does she herself long survive him. The first impression made by Swinburne's rendering is of the lyrical power and variety, the intricate ecstasies of the choruses, the cadenced words awakening a music that is new to the language. Arising from this sensuous delight comes the second impression that Swinburne is expressing certain ideas on religion and of the duty of man to the gods. Finally one becomes conscious of the characters and their story, more particularly of Althæa, who is baffled by the harshness of the immortals. Such is the order of impressions,

but the logical order seems the reverse of this, demanding that one should begin with the treatment of the legend and its characters. Althæa is the most carefully wrought character. In the earlier movements her speeches prelude the tragedy which the later scenes confirm ; distrustful of the gods, and of Atalanta, above all distrustful of love, her one aim centres in her maternal love and her desire to protect her son from passion and from divine vengeance :

Child, if a man serve law through all his life  
And with his whole heart worship, him all gods  
Praise.

The clarity of Althæa's prevision adds to the tragedy that follows : the gods deceive her, for Artemis's maiden Atalanta entraps Meleager in love, and leads him to murder :

Love is one thing, an evil thing, and turns  
Choice words and wisdom into fire and air.

Swinburne concentrates all the passionate fervour of his language in the study of the sad, unwrathful vengeance of Althæa. She undergoes a fierce and fevered mental agony which culminates when she throws the brand into the flames :

I know not if I live ;  
Save that I feel the fire upon my face  
And on my cheek the burning of a brand.  
Yea the smoke bites me, yea I drink the steam  
With nostril and with eyelid and with lip  
Insatiate and intolerant.

Atalanta is more slightly drawn, but Swinburne has allowed this splendid intruder one moving speech, in which she pleads the loneliness of a maiden of Artemis, ' one who shall have no man's love forever, and no face of children born '. Her modesty and her physical grace and lightness make a symbol of the swift lyrical movement of the play. The men are types, yet recognizable ; Toxeus and Plexippus, uncouth and jealous ; Meleager, impetuous but honourable ; Cæneus, the king, baffled yet sane in action and advice. A study of the characterization reveals that the play is not a series of magnificent choruses but a drama with some unity of structure.

From the study of characterization it appears that Swinburne is emphasizing two ideas with some persistence ; first he attacks the gods who make pain such an essential aftermath of pleasure, and secondly he recognizes in love the fiercest example in human life of this union of agony and joy. Both ideas bear some relationship to the dramatic action, but Swinburne expresses them with a disproportionate emphasis. It is here that he departs widely from Greek tragedy. The attack on the gods is most clearly elaborated in the chorus which opens :

Who hath given man speech ? or who hath set therein  
A thorn for peril and a snare for sin ?

The thought behind this passage has been expressed in gentler form in the ' creation ' chorus, ' Before the beginning of years '. The portrayal of love girt around with pain emerges in the magnificent verses, ' We have seen thee, O Love, thou art fair ; thou art goodly, O Love.' Both characters and ideas are affected by the lyrical quality of the drama, for they are submerged in its enchantment. From the first chorus, the famous, ' When the hounds of spring are on winter's traces,' to the last fevered speeches of Althæa, the drama exults in words that sway into perfect rhythms, and rhythms that become symbols of such buoyancy and strength that they seem to mock at the intellectual ideas of the poem, the hate of God, and the fearfulness of love. Here, beyond intellectual discussion, is a reality in melodious words, imaging eternal youthfulness and grace which emerge and re-emerge from life.

Swinburne had discovered himself prosodically ; in the lyrical measures by an apotheosis of the anapaest, served and strengthened by iambs, he had invented new harmonies which were sustained by a daring employment of alliteration and of double rhymes.<sup>12</sup>

In *Erechtheus* (1876), Swinburne's second drama modelled on Greek tragedy, the pattern and restraint of the original are more closely retained. The pedantic pleasure gained in appreciating this imitative skill is not adequate compensation for a loss of spontaneity. Gosse praised the poem justly when he wrote : ' It is the most Greek of all the compositions of Swinburne because it follows with the greatest success, closely

and yet vividly, the exact classical models.' The scale of the drama and the romantic variety of the choruses have been reduced ; it is Swinburne's attempt, under Jowett's discipline, to represent Greek tragedy as perfectly as possible in English. Yet the fable itself is less compact than that employed in *Atalanta*. Erechtheus is a descendant of an earth god whose shrine is among the holy places of Athens. Athens is attacked by the Thracians, and Erechtheus and his wife, Praxithea, fear the disaster of their sacred city. The oracle says that the city will be saved if their daughter Chthonia is sacrificed. The second movement of the play is largely a study of the mind of Praxithea and Chthonia once faced with this tragedy which culminates in Chthonia's death, and an announcement by the herald of Athens's triumph. But the play does not end there ; Erechtheus is made to die, and yet despite the double tragedy Praxithea is left at the close praising the gods who have saved Athens (' I praise the Gods for Athens '). Intellectual criticism can find little to comment on adversely in the play. It might ask that the tragedy of Chthonia should have no sequel in the death of Erechtheus, or that the sense of suffering should not be divided between Praxithea and Athens. In all else it can but admire the close interlocking of choruses and episodes, the cunning episodic narration in one of the choruses of the rape of Oreithyia, elder sister of Chthonia, by Boreas, and above all the calm, deeply-moving portrayal of the Queen. Poetical judgments, however, comprise much that escapes intellectual criticism, and *Erechtheus* fails to achieve the same poetical reality as the less soberly ordered *Atalanta*. Both dramas suggest that the final duty of mortals is the pursuit of honour ; so Althæa instructs Meleager, and so Praxithea, Chthonia. The charm of *Atalanta* lies in the exultant passages which praise beauty, and challenge the gods who have prescribed such narrow and unpleasant ways for men. In *Erechtheus* all is calm acquiescence. The difference between the two moods is in part the result of an attempt to follow classical models more closely, but it arises too from changes, which are examined below, in Swinburne's own mind between 1865 and 1876.

The study of Swinburne's dramatic work may impress us with the massiveness of his talent : the return to his lyrical

poetry reveals his genius. In August 1866 he published *Poems and Ballads*. The volume is the most momentous in the whole period under survey. It marks the intrusion of those new influences which separate the romantic poetry of the early and later nineteenth century. While its immediate reception was marked with a vituperative storm, most memorably portrayed in John Morley's condemnation of Swinburne in *The Saturday Review* as 'the libidinous laureate of a pack of satyrs', the decades that follow show how deeply its influence had penetrated into the values of English poetry. Romanticism was entering upon that last phase, decadent yet beautiful, which found its culmination in the poetry of the nineties. Further, the volume was the crisis of Swinburne's own poetical achievement, and even now its intensity, the variety and pungency of its stanzas, the words that assault with almost a physical impact, and the daring of its themes, leave the impression not merely of a volume that is read but of a haunting and powerful experience lingering within the mind. Underlying its varied contents is a philosophy of aestheticism, flamboyantly amoral, which is the central theme of the opening poems *A Ballad of Life* and *A Ballad of Death*. In the first, Lucrezia Borgia is figured as some Unblessed Damsel who transfigures Fear, Shame, and Lust into Pity, Sorrow, Love. The poem is Pre-Raphaelite in its allegorical setting. The stanza form is imitative of the Italian *canzone*, for which Swinburne had models close at hand in Rossetti's *Early Italian Poets*. *A Ballad of Death*, another Lucrezia poem, expresses the same doctrine in a more extreme form. Beauty can transfigure all hideousness, all sin :

O Sin, thou knowest that all thy shame in her,  
 Was made a goodly thing ;  
 Yea, she caught Shame and shamed him with her kiss,  
 With her fair kiss, and lips much lovelier  
 Than lips of amorous roses in late spring.

This philosophy of beauty was derived ultimately from Théophile Gautier and Baudelaire,<sup>13</sup> but it grew naturally from Swinburne's Pre-Raphaelite affinities and his admiration during this period for the poetry of Keats. It had found fullest expression in his study of William Blake. From Gautier he



had derived further a hatred of the bourgeois, and of conventional restraints, and from Baudelaire the preoccupation with death and the substitution of the painfully beautiful for good and evil as a value within his poetry. These theories combine naturally with Swinburne's Greek enthusiasms to substitute for a Christianity which is a repellent faith of pity and self-denial an idealized paganism where the gods demand suffering but reveal beauty as its partner. In *Hymn to Proserpine* Swinburne enlarges this element in his thought, and suggests that behind the tumult of life, in which Beauty is quickened by the pangs of anguish, there lies Proserpine, the goddess of sleep who will continue after all other gods, new and old. *The Garden of Proserpine* concentrates upon certain aspects of the *Hymn*, and images the desire of eternal rest in the sad melody of its stanzas.

It was not the novelty of the philosophy, however, which gave *Poems and Ballads* its peculiar power, but the brilliance and variety with which its moods were recorded. The volume contains poems written between 1857-1865.<sup>14</sup> The poems composed before 1862 are, with few exceptions, the less distinctive pieces, such as, *Before Parting*, *A Song in Time of Order*, *A Song in Time of Revolution*. But Swinburne has gathered from these years some of his ballad pieces, *The Leper*, *May Janet*, *The Sea-Swallows*, keen, poignant poems, which commemorate his study of the ballad form. Apart from these, *At Eleusis* stands out as an early achievement in a blank-verse manipulation of a classical theme for which Landor may have been the model. In 1862 Swinburne completed *The Masque of Queen Bersabe*, a piece in the manner of the miracle-plays which attaches itself to the influence of William Morris.

The poems, for which *Poems and Ballads* are mainly remembered, belong to the crucial years 1862-1865. Such is their variety both in mood and in prosody that it is difficult to suggest any satisfactory grouping. The dominating theme is obviously that of love, but love approached through devious ways. Two poems stand apart, *The Triumph of Time* and *A Leave Taking*. In *The Triumph of Time* Swinburne commemorates in the same magnificent stanza as he used in the first chorus of *Atalanta* the rejection of his love by Jane Simon. The unhurrying onslaught of its verses elevates the personal

mood into a universal reality, while in *A Leave-Taking* with quieter tone but rare lyrical success he bids farewell to this subject :

Let us go hence, my songs ; she will not hear.  
Let us go hence together without fear.

The other love poems are portrayals of the intricate and abnormal in passion. They centre in the great sequence of dramatic poems, *Laus Veneris*, *Dolores*, *Faustine*, and Swinburne has brought dominating ingenuity in verse to their expression. In *Laus Veneris*, with a stanza reminiscent of Fitzgerald's *Rubáiyát* he fashions the Tannhäuser legend which Wagner and Heine had treated. Morris was considering the same theme during this period for the story of *The Hill of Venus in The Earthly Paradise* ; ' Owen Meredith ' and Julian Fane issued their version in 1861, while later in the century John Davidson retold it in ballad form. Swinburne found within the legend the very values with which his mind was agitated : love was not pleasure but a fever of desire and pain and an unending satiety :

Ah yet would God this flesh of mine might be  
Where air might wash and long leaves cover me,  
Where tides of grass break into foam of flowers,  
Or where the wind's feet shine along the sea.

In *Dolores*, Swinburne uses with great skill an eight-line stanza, basically trisyllabic ; he employs double rhymes freely and balances its singing music with a short final line. The poem reveals a picture, symbolic, and yet dramatic, of Dolores, daughter of Libitina and Priapus, who afflicts men with a passion cruel but irresistible. The sadistic element (' on thy mouth though the kisses are bloody ') intrudes more openly here, and the picture of dread satiety is outlined with stark emphasis. *Faustine* is a more dramatic expression of the cruelty and sadness that dwell with love. Swinburne in his notes has described the origin of his conception. ' The chance which suggested to me this poem was one which may happen any day to any man—the sudden sight of a living face which recalled the well-known likeness of another, dead for centuries, the noble and faultless type of the elder Faustina as seen in

coin and bust.' Within his poem Swinburne imagines a gladiator who has been Faustine's lover, standing up in the arena at the moment before he dies and denouncing her pitiless cruelty :

You have the face that suits a woman  
For her soul's screen—  
The sort of beauty that's called human  
In hell, Faustine.

Throughout 'Faustine' occurs as the last word in each stanza, and a corresponding rhyming word is found in the second line ; the effect of this deliberate repetition is to emphasize the sickened lust of the dying man.

A similar theme in varied form intrudes into a number of poems of classical suggestion. *Atalanta* had immediately preceded *Poems and Ballads*, and it is not strange that Swinburne should employ classical themes again in this volume. The Proserpine poems are one reflection of this interest. *Phædra* uses suggestions from Euripides, while *Anactoria*, in which Swinburne presents 'that violence of affection between one and another which hardens into rage and deepens into despair', is based on the fragments of Sappho. The poem which exists most completely in classical legend, modified for Swinburne's own purposes, is *Itylus*. Here he achieves a calmer mood, a rare beauty, undisturbed by the perfervid, forced atmosphere which affects some of his most finished poems. The degree to which he has transfigured a crude legend can only be realized to the full when his poem is compared with the story in its primitive form. Tereus had violated his sister-in-law, Philomela, and in revenge Procne, his wife, served up Itys, her son, as a dish before him. Itys was turned into a pheasant, Tereus into an owl, Procne into a swallow, and Philomela into a nightingale. Swinburne, relying on a number of classical suggestions and aware of Ovid's version, seizes upon a single incident in the legend and treats it in an allusive way. He pictures Philomela mourning that her sister, the swallow, has forgotten the death of Itys :

O sister, sister, thy first-begotten !  
The hands that cling and the feet that follow,  
The voice of the child's blood crying yet  
*Who hath remembered me ? who hath forgotten ?*

Thou hast forgotten, O summer swallow,  
But the world shall end when I forget.

The legend is transfigured into a fresh poetic reality, and prosodic skill reveals the ensanguined poignancy of its mood. It evokes memories different from those of the other poems, and one is tempted to wish that Swinburne's poetic intensity had been nourished thus, more often, with wider sources of suggestion.

Such were some of the poems which make *Poems and Ballads* a critical volume of English poetry. Its intrinsic merits do not comprise the sum of its importance in poetic history. Underlying its lyrical moods, and implicit in its themes, there lay a protest, almost satiric in purpose, against the placid measures of Tennyson and the more guarded moods of early Victorian poetry. The faith of liberty, to which Swinburne dedicated his next volume, had already here found expression of provoking daring. The volume marked the culmination of the romantic movement in its technical aspects. The prosodic variety which Coleridge, Shelley, and Keats had given to English poetry, applied by Tennyson for his own purposes, was carried to the limits of verbal music and stanzaic ingenuity. All that would follow would either be imitative or hollow unless poetry could discover new ways, and much of the poetic history of the later nineteenth century is an attempt, only partially successful, to break from this tradition and discover new forms.

*Ave atque Vale*, an elegy composed in 1867 on a false report of Baudelaire's death, and not published until 1878, is closely allied in mood to *Poems and Ballads*. The poem belongs to the genre of classical pastoral elegy, the tradition of *Lycidas*, *Adonais*, and *Thyrsis*. Enough that Swinburne's threnody is equal to any of its predecessors. Swinburne seldom more successfully combined the intricate melody of a complex stanza with the calm, clear expression of his thought. He resurrects the mental life of Baudelaire, and in so doing meditates in fine solemn verse on some of the moods which had dominated *Poems and Ballads*.

The stimuli which had aroused *Poems and Ballads* had been strange, specialized, and unnatural. They were never replaced by others of equal strength. *Songs before Sunrise* ('other books

are books, *Songs before Sunrise* is myself') is Swinburne's partially effective attempt to gain fresh sources of suggestion for his poetical creation. Late in 1866 he had already conceived the possibility of modifying his principle of art for its own sake, and he set himself the task of constructing poetry political in theme and philosophical in its ultimate purpose. The first results were two elaborate pieces published separately in 1867, *Ode on the Insurrection in Candia* and *A Song of Italy*. This enthusiasm for Italian liberty was strengthened by a meeting in 1867 with Giuseppe Mazzini. Jowett and other friends, who felt that this change of interest would have a healthy influence, had engineered the encounter, and Swinburne was charmed by the idealistic Italian refugee who instructed him to 'dedicate his writing power to do good'. The result was *Songs before Sunrise* (1871). This sudden adoption of the Italian cause gives the volume an artificial atmosphere, which was noted by Gosse, who commented on the 'apparent causelessness of the emotion, and the vain violence as of a whirlwind in a vacuum'. Yet it must be allowed that Swinburne's ultimate enthusiasm is a philosophic conception of liberty, and that Italy is adopted merely as a central example of this theme. The poems can thus be grouped into two categories, those definitely Italian in theme, and those in which the more comprehensive political philosophy is outlined,<sup>15</sup> and while the localized Italian poems have a vapidness of mood, the philosophical pieces possess a contrasting solidity and strength.

The topical poems commemorate incidents in Garibaldi's revolt in the autumn of 1867. *Blessed among Women* is an Ode to Signora Cairoli, whose sons, with a small band of Garibaldians, were repulsed in attempting to approach Rome. *Mentana* reflects upon Garibaldi's encounter with French and Papal troops in which his band was finally routed. *The Halt before Rome* relates the 1867 campaign to that general struggle for Liberty which Swinburne conceived as the one worthy aim of political endeavour. Despite their strenuous rhetoric these pieces seem lost in the ephemeral, while a perfervid mood agitates throughout them. Transition to elegies which express more general sympathy for Italy is gained in such poems as *Super Flumina Babylonis*, where Swinburne contrives an effective contrast of long and short lines, to give the mood of

contemplation in which the poem dwells. Emerging from these Italian poems there appear a number of poems, such as *The Eve of Revolution*, *The Litany of Nations*, and *Quia multum amavit*, in which Swinburne pleads for a revolution to remove from Europe the type of tyranny with which Italy had been oppressed. Throughout, these poems have an air of unreality, an absence of contact with the movement of events in 1871, while the references to Italy contained within them approach a mood which is ecstatic :

We are but men, are we,  
And thou art Italy ;  
What shall we do for thee with our desire ?  
What gift shall we deserve to give ?  
How shall we die to do thee service, or how live ? <sup>16</sup>

As a pendant to these pieces are poems, such as *To Walt Whitman in America*, in which Swinburne complains of the inadequate rôle which England appears to him to be playing. Further, he dedicates individual poems to personalities such as Shelley and Mazzini, who have advanced the cause of Liberty. All these political poems retain the prosodic virtuosity which had distinguished *Poems and Ballads*, though they miss something in verbal cunning. The sexual imagery of the earlier poems intrudes frequently, even when the theme is narrowly political ; so in his appeal to France in *Quia multum amavit* he writes :

Thou hast mixed thy limbs with the son of a harlot, a stranger,  
Mouth to mouth, limb to limb,

and anti-Christian elements are also allowed to intrude into the imagery of many of the poems. In these and other pieces, Italian and political, he constructs the groundwork of the philosophical poems. Their mood is anticipated in *Prelude*, an expression of personal faith which reveals his adoption of the Italian cause as part of a conscious effort to modify his poetic purposes :

Then he stood up, and trod to dust  
Fear and desire, mistrust and trust,  
And dreams of bitter sleep and sweet,  
And bound for sandals on his feet  
Knowledge and patience of what must

And what things may be, in the heat  
 And cold of years that rot and rust  
 And alter ; and his spirit's meat  
 Was freedom, and his staff was wrought  
 Of strength and his cloak woven of thought.

In a later stanza he pleads, in a vocabulary derived from Shelley, for the quest of an ideal freedom which is liberated from the tyrannies of earth and heaven.

*Prelude* serves to introduce the poems in which Swinburne's philosophy is conveyed, *Hertha*, *Genesis*, *Hymn of Man*, and, less directly, *Mater Dolorosa* and *Mater Triumphalis*. The summary of his thought can be gained from a study of this poetic sequence. The world, he suggests, was first a chaos ; it has developed by the contraries of life, death, and change, 'the rhythmic anguish of growth'. The creator and the created are one, and the spirit in them should live in liberty. Man has made for his own torment a shadow, which he calls god, and to overthrow that god is the most powerful step towards man's spiritual regeneration. Liberty is the spiritual in man, and through that life of liberty man gains contact with the eternal. This thought is clothed with magnificence of expression. In *Hertha*, the unity of life is outlined, and Swinburne himself spoke justly when he wrote of this poem, 'Of all I have done, I rate *Hertha* highest as a single piece, finding in it the most of lyric force and music combined with the most of condensed and clarified thought.' In *Hymn of Man* his attack upon the God of established religion flames forth with malevolent power. Certain poems are allied to these philosophical pieces ; they are more incidental in application and more dramatic in form. In *Tiresias*, Swinburne exploits classical incident and adapts the dramatic monologue form to show his faith in Liberty. The poem is brought into such close alliance with his Italian enthusiasms that its classical movement is warped. Indeed, its full purport is made clear only by Swinburne's note : 'Tiresias, at the grave of Antigone, i.e. (understand) Dante at the grave of Italia.'<sup>17</sup> A more memorable poem in this group is *Before a Crucifix*, in which Swinburne possesses himself of a keener dramatic method for his attack on Christianity than he shows elsewhere in the volume.

*Songs before Sunrise* is the critical volume in Swinburne's development. He had formulated in *Poems and Ballads* certain aesthetic theories, and had discovered a sufficient strength of imagination to render them a poetic reality. He had travelled down that road as far as it was possible to go. In *Songs before Sunrise* he had fallen from the earlier theories, and attempted to replace them with others which would lead his poetry back closer to the common ways of life. He had succeeded in part, and a noble body of poetry marked his endeavour. The imagination had not kindled to response with its finest spontaneity, but the work achieved had solid and sober qualities. And now what of the future?

The years between 1871 and Swinburne's retirement to 'The Pines' in 1879 were rich in publication. Of dramatic work, the enormous *Bothwell* was completed by 1874, and *Erechtheus* by 1876. In lyrical work the yield is less. *Songs of Two Nations* (1874) is merely a reprint of earlier work. Swinburne gathers into the volume *The Song of Italy* (1867), *Ode on the French Republic* (1870), and the series of sonnets *Diræ*, directed against Napoleon III written in the years 1868-1869. The single volume which remains is *Poems and Ballads (Second Series)* (1878). Here he achieved the most calm expression of his lyrical genius, detached from those pulsating qualities which had agitated the earlier work. The themes of *Songs before Sunrise* are retained incidentally; in *The Last Oracle* he continues the anti-Christian mood of *Hymn of Man*, while his political enthusiasms are variously expressed in *To Kossuth* and *Rizpah* and *The White Czar*. None of these pieces can parallel the quality of the greater poems in *Songs before Sunrise*, and they appear as only a minor contribution to the poetical emphasis of this volume. Many of the poems suggest pre-occupation with literature, not with life. It is as if the sources of creative suggestion arising from his own experience had been exhausted, so that he turned his rare technical powers to secondary purposes. So he writes a number of poems in which the metrical interest exceeds the poetical, verses in Latin and French, experiments with choriambics and the sestina. He translates a number of Villon's ballades, excluding wisely the pieces rendered by D. G. Rossetti, and he contrives to endow them with the fresh energy of original poems. He writes poems



on Théophile Gautier, Victor Hugo, Barry Cornwall, and a *Ballad of François Villon*. He begins the versification of his critical enthusiasms: a sonnet capturing pictorially the mood of Cyril Tournear's plays, and *In the Bay*, where he recalls the career and the poetical significance of Christopher Marlowe. Allied to the literary interest is the elegiac mood: the outstanding piece *Ave atque Vale* (1867) appears here only by an accident of publication, but *Inferiae*, a poem to Swinburne's own father, and *Epicede* on James Lorimer Graham are examples of this genre.

One group of poems, of which the most distinguished representatives are, *A Forsaken Garden*, *At a Month's End*, *The Year of the Rose*, *A Ballad of Dreamland*, *A Vision of Spring in Winter*, lies apart from these literary preoccupations. Here he has captured a series of moods, sombre, passionate, and beautiful, and conveyed them on a background of natural suggestion, bringing to their expression the mature powers of his poetical skill. They possess certain common elements, and a more varied sympathy of nature with human mood is shown than elsewhere. In *A Forsaken Garden*, the desolate scene portrayed symbolizes with a powerful melancholy, reminiscent of Anglo-Saxon poetry, the desolation of love and of life, while in *At a Month's End* the storm on the sea and the passionate movement of a human mind are brought into symbolic contact. Throughout all the poems there is a sense of loss, memories of 'the heaven of dear times dead to me', of the old love 'dead and buried'. This emphasis appears even in the softer magical mood of *The Year of the Rose* and *A Vision of Spring in Winter*; it recurs at the close of *A Ballad of Dreamland*:

In the world of dreams I have chosen my part,  
To sleep for a season and hear no word  
Of true love's truth or of light love's art,  
Only the song of a secret bird.

The achievement within this volume, calm and mature though it is, does not fulfil the promise of either *Poems and Ballads* or *Songs before Sunrise*. Swinburne has abandoned many of his earlier theories, aesthetic and philosophical. He has dissolved his feverish urgency into calmer melodies, but the resulting quiet of this volume suggests sequestration. It is as

if the future may hold mirrored before him but fading shapes of past experience.

Swinburne published over twenty volumes after his retirement to 'The Pines' with Theodore Watts-Dunton in 1879. Among these are eight volumes of lyrical verse. *The Heptalogia* (1880) lies apart as a collection of clever verse parodies in which the mannerisms of Coventry Patmore and Elizabeth Barrett Browning and others are successfully entrapped. The same year (1880) saw the publication of both *Songs of the Springtides* and of *Studies in Song*. With these it is impossible not to feel disappointment. He is preoccupied with the poetical treatment of literary themes: in *Birthday Ode* he celebrates Hugo in a mosaic of intricate reference, while *Song for Landor* has such elaborate allusions to Landor's works that Swinburne's notes are necessary to make the poem intelligible. Poetry seems smothered in the massed verbiage. Not more successful were Swinburne's attempts at nature description and the portrayal of landscape effects. Gosse has suggested that Swinburne was led to this type of work by Watts-Dunton's influence. The results were either the resurrection of old matter in new form, as in *By the North Sea*, or the ineffectual attempt to portray localized natural effects, as in *The Garden of Cymodoce*, a poem on the Island of Sark, and in *Evening on the Broads*.

One poem stands out from the verse of these two volumes, *Thalassius* in *Songs of the Springtides*. This is a spiritual self-confession, idealized out of autobiography and rendered allegorically. Thalassius, a foundling, a child of Apollo and the sea, is educated by an idealized figure who taught him of Liberty, of the power of song, of love that turned 'God's heart toward man and man's to God', and of hatred towards all that imprisoned either body or soul. So educated he passed into life and met the god of love, and later when the god had gone he dedicated himself to dangerous delights; he

Sat panther-throned beside Erigone,  
Riding the red ways of the revel through  
Midmost of pale-mouthed passion's crownless crew.

After this episode he returned to his mother, the Sea, 'communed with his own heart, and had rest', and once again the

power of song grew within him. His father too consoled him with the promise that he should sing

The song of all the winds that sing of me,  
And in thy soul the sense of all the sea.

The mythological movement cannot disguise the personal interpretation. Swinburne was reasserting his belief in Liberty, in the life that is completely unshackled, but he was suggesting further that the fevered years of *Poems and Ballads* were but an episode in his spiritual life, and that his richer service to poetry lay in his later nature poetry. So he may have believed and so he reasserted in his prose, yet *Thalassius* itself is a denial of this faith, for its most spectacular passage is the long simile describing Nero's throne, used to illustrate the fevered years. The glamour of this passage renders it an unintentional confession that all that is quickened into poetry in his later work owes its origin to the recollection of the spiritual crisis which centres in *Poems and Ballads*. Creative development was arrested there, and much of what is vital in his later work rests in memories, shadows, and a few flashes of sudden recollection.

The remaining volumes show clearly the damp that fell about Swinburne's path in the later years. *A Century of Roundels* (1883) displayed a continuance of technical ingenuity in the mastery of a difficult form, without a corresponding strength in content. Nature has been supplemented by an interest in baby life; the 'libidinous laureate' of *Faustine* has become the laureate of babyhood. His admiration for Blake had led him to believe that he too could capture innocence with power, and it is pathetic to watch his failure. The daintiness of the roundel volume is lost in *A Midsummer Holiday* (1884), where he returns to landscape poetry, to literary themes, to Hugo, and to an attack, due to Tennyson's peerage, on the House of Lords. *Poems and Ballads (Third Series)* (1889) was mainly memorable for the publication of a number of ballads which he had written before 1865; the contrast between these and the other poems shows what had disappeared with the years. In *Astrophel* (1894) he turned to write of personal associations, of Morris, Richard Burton, and Bell Scott; but the other pieces in this volume, the nature studies and the boastful patriotism, were hollow-sounding work. *A Channel Passage and other*

*Poems* (1904), the last published volume of lyrical work, is the strangest medley. Landscape pieces are mixed with baby verses, attacks on the Boers and Irish with a plea for a strong navy, and there are the usual number of verse obituaries. The one attractive element lies in Swinburne's prologues to a number of Elizabethan plays. Apart from these, he wrote not only less well than in his earlier verse but to meaner purposes. He fell, like Wordsworth, too soon into the sere, the yellow leaf, and, like Wordsworth, he failed to realize his own falling off. Quantities of unpublished work testified to his unswerving diligence.

Swinburne's most successful poetry in the years at 'The Pines' was not in lyric but in two longer pieces, *Tristram of Lyonesse* (1882) and *The Tale of Balen* (1896). *Tristram*, his longest poem, has suffered from the first from superficial criticism; each critic seems to have done little more than to copy the impressionistic judgments of his predecessors. Swinburne's own statement summarizes the values behind the poem: 'My aim was simply to present that story, not diluted and debased as it had been in our own time by other hands, but undefaced by improvement and undeformed by transformation as it was known to the age of Dante wherever the chronicles of romance found hearing, from Ercildoune to Florence; and not in the epic or romantic form of sustained or continuous narrative, but mainly through a succession of dramatic scenes or pictures with descriptive settings or backgrounds.' In Tennyson he found the *Tristram* story compressed into an inadequate episode. Arnold had forced it equally into subservience upon didacticism. Redeeming it from such purposes, he wished to render it not simply as a story as Morris would have done, but exploiting all its 'finer shades' as in the best tradition of the chronicles of romance. The heavy-laden verse of this later period threatens at times to frustrate him. It has an elaborate imagery without sustaining power, which disintegrates and diffuses the narrative; this is most emphasized in the early books, particularly in the description of Iseult in Book I: 'Iseult, more fair than foam or dawn was white.' As the poem develops one realizes that its strength is neither narrative nor lyrical but dramatic; it lies in such scenes as that of Iseult's prayer in Book V, or in the address to love in

Book VI, or in the strength of the scene of Tristram's death in Book IX. Swinburne has applied the most courtly of medieval narrative traditions for his own purposes, and has achieved a modified success.

The interest in the Tristram legend had been with Swinburne since his earliest years as a poet, and the magnificent invocation to love which preludes the poem had been written as early as 1871. It is not strange therefore that this piece so intimately connected with his early years should possess, more than any of his later poetry, the strength of his great poetic years. He investigated the sources for this poem with thoroughness. His main authority was Sir Walter Scott's edition of *Sir Tristrem*, but he knew Malory and he was aware of the earlier treatments of the legend. The poem fails in the fullness of its effect. Romanticism had over-worked the Arthurian legend in the nineteenth century, and Swinburne comes late into the field. The crises he managed with success and the moods of passion, but the poem lacks a unifying narrative texture to give it a continued interest and a consistency of purpose.

In *The Tale of Balen* he re-told, with close, sometimes verbal, adherence to Malory's narratives, a story which Tennyson roughly mishandled in *Balin and Balan*. Less ambitious than *Tristram*, this lyrical poem is more secure, and in a tail-rhyming stanza not unlike that of *The Lady of Shallott* he gave without his customary grandiloquence a fresh rendering of a medieval theme. He was doing here at the end of his career what in his early years in *Queen Yseult* he had achieved for the Tristram story.

Swinburne, in writing of Byron's poetry, suggested that his greatest work as a poet was the mass of his poetry taken altogether. This certainly is not true of Swinburne's work. Viewed as a whole, it cannot escape a suggestion of waste in the exploitation of the overworked blank-verse tradition of unactable drama, and in the diffuseness apparent in so much of the later work. He comes through at his greatest in individual lyrics, and in single passages in the dramatic and narrative pieces. The motives from which his poetry arose were so unusual that they tend to emphasize the withdrawal of poetry from life and ordinary human action, which has already been noticed in Rossetti's work. Unlike Rossetti he

had strong sentiments on matters of faith and politics, but here, too, he was in revolt against contemporary values; in religion he was mainly destructive and rebellious, and in politics without cognizance of the realities of his time. His mind gained its keenest poetic expression in the years (1862-1866) when, guided by his study of Keats and Blake and Gautier and Baudelaire, he was led to believe in art for its own sake. Rossetti, too, had come to that position, but he had reached it naturally, out of his own poetical purposes; he lacked Swinburne's aggressive insistence on its validity. Swinburne's later work is an ineffectual attempt to modify that early position. His main contribution to the poetry of the later nineteenth century lies in those early moods. He emblazoned them with such verbal and rhythmical designs that, whatever poetry might achieve, nothing more seemed possible of accomplishment within this narrow exotic conception of romanticism which he had marked out as his own territory.

1. There are many biographical works. *Swinburne*, E. Gosse (1917), can be supplemented by the fuller information of *La Jeunesse de Swinburne* (1837-1867), G. Lafourcade, 2 vols. (1928), and *Swinburne* (1932), an English volume by the same author. Aspects of Swinburne's biography and work have been examined by S. C. Chew (1929); F. Delattre, *Charles Baudelaire et le jeune Swinburne* (1930); John Drinkwater (1913); W. B. D. Henderson, *Swinburne and Landor* (1918), a most suggestive study; C. J. Mary Leith, *The Boyhood of A. C. Swinburne* (1917); W. R. Rutland, *Swinburne, A Nineteenth Century Hellene* (1931); and by T. Earle Welby, *A Study of Swinburne* (1926). Lafourcade carries the study of Swinburne's early work much further than any other work, but interesting estimates are to be found in Harold Nicolson's *Swinburne* (1926), and *Swinburne and Baudelaire* (1930), and in Paul de Reul, *L'Œuvre de Swinburne* (1922). Swinburne MSS. and related material are (1932) mainly in the possession of T. J. Wise, who has issued *A Bibliography of A. C. Swinburne*, vol. I (1919) and vol. II (1920), *A Swinburne Library* (1925), and the bibliography in *The Bonchurch Edition* (1925-1927). See also T. J. Wise, *The Catalogue of the Ashley Library*, vols. VI and VII. Swinburne's works in verse and prose, with a number of letters, were issued as *The Bonchurch Edition*, E. Gosse and T. J. Wise, 20 vols. (1926-1927).

2. Gosse frequently recurs in his *Swinburne* to physical characteristics, which he emphasizes, with a touch of the grotesque, throughout the volume.

3. Quoted in Gosse, *Swinburne*.

4. The details can be found in Lafourcade, *La Jeunesse de Swinburne*, vol. I, 178.

5. Meredith portrayed Swinburne as Tracy Runningbrook in *Sandra Belloni*.

6. *Bonchurch Edition*, vol. I

7. *Joyeuse Garde* (a Tristram fragment), *Lancelot*, and the *Rudel* poems (a possible Browning influence).

8. *Ballads of the English Border*, W. A. MacInnes (1925).

9. *Dedicatory Epistle*.

10. The sources of *The Queen Mother* and of the Mary Stuart plays have been admirably worked out in great detail by E. F. James in an unpublished thesis of the University of Bristol, and I am indebted to him for permission to quote his findings.

11. See Lafourcade, *La Jeunesse*, vol. II, p. 384, and the same author in *La Revue Anglo-Américaine* (December 1925).

12. For the prosody of the poem see Lafourcade, vol. II, p. 408.

13. Floris Delattre, loc. cit. in 1 (1930); G. Turquet-Milnes, *The Influence of Baudelaire in France and England* (1913).

14. See Lafourcade for a detailed account of the chronology of this volume studied with the aid of Swinburne's manuscripts.

15. An interesting account of this volume is to be found in Mr. Harold Nicolson's *Swinburne*, and from this I have borrowed suggestions.

16. *The Eve of Revolution*.

17. Swinburne quoted by Gosse, *Swinburne*, p. 177.

## CHAPTER III

### CHRISTINA GEORGINA ROSSETTI

NUMEROUS lives of Christina Rossetti (1830-1894) have been written,<sup>1</sup> and her brother, William Michael, that pedestrian Boswell of the Pre-Raphaelites, has issued a memoir and some letters. Yet her daily existence, despite all this scrutiny, appears meagre and drab, a combination of negatives and hesitations, overhung with disease. Outside these biographical banalities and contrasting with them there lies a rich mental and spiritual experience whose record can be found in her poetry, and in some of her letters.

She was the youngest child in a family of four and overshadowed by both her brothers. William by his domestic righteousness had an importance in practical affairs which she could not emulate. Gabriel was a genius. 'You must not expect me to possess a tithe of your capacities,' she wrote to him, 'though I humbly—or proudly—lay claim to family likeness.'<sup>2</sup> To her mother she was deeply attached: the four volumes of poems published in her mother's lifetime are all dedicated to her. This love for her mother was strengthened by their long association, their attempts to start private schools, and their trips, under William's guidance, to the Continent. Further, she shared with her mother a deep piety, and an attachment to High Anglicanism which appears as the most consistent purpose in her life. Twice she had suitors, and both of them, if William Michael knew the truth and told it, she rejected on religious grounds. Neither was of outstanding attraction: first there was James Collinson, a minor Pre-Raphaelite, whose work attempts to combine contemporary themes with Pre-Raphaelite device, and then came Charles Bagot Cayley, whom William Michael describes as 'scholar, author, linguist, translator of the *Divina Commedia*.'<sup>3</sup> Collinson became a Catholic and Cayley was but indifferently orthodox, and so Christina Rossetti remained unwedded. Her whole adult life was threatened by ill-health culminating in Graves's disease in 1871. On her partial recovery in 1873 she became a novice, and later a sister, of an Anglican Order in



London. Her mother died in 1886, and the last years of her own life were scourged by disease : cancer was discovered in 1892 ; in 1894 she died, and was buried in Highgate Cemetery. Such is the meagre biographical record, and very little illumination can we find within it upon the experience that discovered *Goblin Market* or *The Prince's Progress*.

Her poetical work is contained in a number of volumes published in her lifetime and in posthumous collections. The volumes she herself published were *Verses* (privately printed by her maternal grandfather) in 1847 ; *Goblin Market and other Poems* (1862) ; *The Prince's Progress and other Poems* (1866) ; *Sing-Song* (1872) ; *Goblin Market, Prince's Progress*, etc. (1875) ; *A Pageant* (1881) ; *Verses* (1893). W. M. Rossetti collected her unpublished work, and with uncritical enthusiasm issued this, along with pieces already published, in *New Poems* (1896), and in *The Poetical Works* (1904). Her contributions to periodicals were numerous, including poems written under the pseudonym 'Ellen Alleyn', to *The Germ* (1850).<sup>4</sup> She published in 1870 a volume of short stories, *Commonplace*, which reveals an irony and humour that does not intrude frequently into her poetry. She also wrote a number of prose devotional pamphlets for the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge.

In studying a writer for whom biographical material is so sparse one turns to the poetical work for the content of emotional and spiritual experience. Certain persistent motives govern her creative work, varying in their outward form, in the shape and fashion of the symbol, but recognizably the same in origin. However she may have appeared in daily life, that portion of herself which she converted into poetry is possessed of a singular consistency, a definable continuity of desire. Even in her juvenile pieces there arises the same poetic argument that one finds in her mature work. A warm desire kindles within her for joy and love, the pleasurable and sensuous acceptance of life. Before she can gain this breath of the warm South, fear chills her : life is insecure, refusing to yield what it has promised, its joys but brief preludes to enduring sin. Her early poetry dwells in a latent conflict between these two motives. They resolve themselves, a little sadly, in a faith in Christianity which is at once passionate and sombre. This devout other-worldliness leaves Christina

Rossetti with a deep, somewhat baffled antagonism to life. It is here that she endures a world-weariness, similar in expression to Swinburne's in *Poems and Ballads* though reached by a very different sequence of experience. So she is led to write to Dante Gabriel during his last illness: 'I want to assure you that, however harassed by memory or by anxiety you may be, I have (more or less) heretofore gone through the same ordeal. I have borne myself till I became unbearable by myself, and then I have found help in confessions and absolution, and spiritual counsel and relief inexpressible.' In poetry her treatment of this desire that life should end is frequent. So in *Dream Land*:

Rest, rest, a perfect rest  
Shed over brow and breast;  
Her face is toward the west,  
The purple land.  
She cannot see the grain  
Ripening on hill and plain,  
She cannot feel the rain  
Upon her hand.

This central conflict gains frequent expression in her poetry; it colours moods and incidents which seem at first sight unrelated. The ubiquity of a single theme has often been suggested as the most limiting factor in Christina Rossetti's poetical work. Dante Gabriel recognized it and told her ironically that she was ever "sulking" beside the grave of twice-buried hope! Christina herself admitted that the impulses behind her work were closely confined. She writes to Dante Gabriel: 'It is impossible to go on singing out-loud to one's one-stringed lyre. It is not in me, and therefore it will never come out of me, to turn to politics or philanthropy with Mrs. Browning: such many-sidedness I leave to a greater than I, and, having said my say, may well sit silent.'<sup>5</sup> Yet these circumscribed motives give her work a consistency and integrity, as if its many parts, *Goblin Market*, her nature poetry, and *The Convent Threshold* were but contributory to one symbolic intention.

Her irony and humour, which disappear after Dante Gabriel's death, allow her to detach herself sometimes from her usual pre-occupations. In the *Goblin Market* volume she has a poem,

*Winter, My Secret*, which would seem to forewarn the critic from attempting any psychological evaluation of her lyrical work :

I tell my secret ? No indeed, not I :  
 Perhaps some day, who knows ?  
 But not to-day ; it froze, and blows, and snows,  
 And you're too curious : fie !  
 You want to hear it ? well :  
 Only, my secret's mine, and I won't tell.  
  
 Or, after all, perhaps there's none :  
 Suppose there is no secret after all,  
 But only just my fun.

In a preface to the 1847 volume her grandfather pleads that he may be excused 'for desiring to retain these early spontaneous efforts in a permanent form and for having silenced the objections urged by her modest diffidence.' The volume contains little of poetical distinction. Most of the verses are juvenile pieces completed before she was sixteen, and are little more than intelligent exercises with a maddening reiteration of the rhymes such as 'trees' and 'breeze'. At the age of twelve she caught into some simple lines to her mother the accent of true poetry :

To-day's your natal day ;  
 Sweet flow'rs I bring ;  
 Mother, accept, I pray,  
 My offering.  
  
 And may you happy live,  
 And long us bless ;  
 Receiving, as you give,  
 Great happiness.

But this would appear a happy accident not soon to be repeated. While there is no distinct promise of her later accomplishment, the volume has interest in showing her early preoccupation with death, and with the motive of unfulfilled love which precedes in her poetry the appearance in her life of either of her suitors. The opening poem, *The Dead City*, preludes certain elements found in *Goblin Market* ; while a number of the poems show her interest in Italian. In brief, some of the motives of her later poetry are already apparent, but the poetry itself has not yet appeared.

*Goblin Market and other Poems* (1862) was the first volume issued by the Pre-Raphaelites and their associates to gain wide public recognition. After *The Germ* (1850) their zeal for publication seems to have been frustrated. Rossetti's first volume of original verse was not to appear until 1870; Morris's *Defence of Guenevere* had appeared in 1858 but had attracted little attention; Swinburne had published *The Queen Mother* and *Rosamond* in 1860, and had been uniformly neglected. It remained for Christina Rossetti, 'the Jael who led our host to victory', as Swinburne called her, to make the reading public aware that a new poetry was developing. In *Goblin Market* itself she evolved a completely Pre-Raphaelite poem, and yet one whose elements could be so easily assimilated that it was accepted without hostility. Exact detail, a Pre-Raphaelite dictum, not only exists in the poem but is fashioned into one of its main ornaments; 'bloom-down cheeked peaches', 'swart-headed mulberries', such are the fruit, and the goblin men are minutely described:

One like a wombat prowled obtuse and furry,  
One like a ratel tumbled hurry skurry.

Yet the poem cannot be adequately described in the terms of Pre-Raphaelitism, and its contact with the movement seems more accidental than deliberate. *Goblin Market* is one of the most mysterious poems of the period; it raises the same problems as *The Ancient Mariner*, and a solution cannot be gained as completely as with Coleridge's poem. In both a moral is suggested, as an incongruous anticlimax to a poetic narrative full of glamour and magic. In both the metre has novel elements and has unusual importance in producing the poetic effect. In both the coherent witchery of the poem seems to have developed from wide associations of reading and memory. Of the moral conclusion to *Goblin Market* little can be said. It is much more logical than that of *The Ancient Mariner*. Two sisters Laura and Lizzie were tempted with dangerous fruits by goblin men; Lizzie succumbed, and Laura saved her; and so if there is to be any moral, 'For there is no friend like a sister', is not an unnatural one. The moral has no importance for the appreciation of the poem, though it has its place in the analysis of Christina Rossetti's mind. It is

very like the moral she had seen so frequently in her childhood's books, such as *Peter Parley's Annual*,<sup>6</sup> and which she introduced later into the child verses in *Sing-Song*. Her motive in placing it here was to suggest that this was another child poem, a fantasy to which no profound meaning was to be attached. Prosodically the poem is cunningly contrived, and yet the form seems a mass of irregularities which by design or instinct she has succeeded in manipulating to serve her poetic purposes. Lines vary in length from ten syllables to four syllables; trochaic mingles with iambic and dactylic movement. No counting of syllables or numbering of accents can torture this prosody into a single pattern. Licence is equally used in rhyme; assonance and imperfect rhymes appear, and one rhyme is frequently carried through a number of lines. Yet throughout there is the sense of control, even, at times, of restraint. It is gained by repeating lines of the same rhythm as if a motive were repeated, by adjusting the rhythm, particularly in its speed, to the meaning, and by asserting regular decasyllabics or octosyllabics after passages in which all regular movement seems in danger of being lost. Nor is the poem so irregular as it appears on the printed page; many of the short lines unite in couplets to give single lines of some five-foot variety. In much of her work Christina Rossetti was careless prosodically, flat, and occasionally incompetent. Here she achieved that rare prosodic success of giving a poem the only form in which, one feels, it could ever have been held.

The main problem of discovering the background of association behind this poem remains. Much of its colour and details derive from early reading in *The Arabian Nights*. Her early volume of 1847 has a poem, *The Dead City*, a version of an Arabian Nights theme of a city of marble men, a story used also by Meredith and James Thomson. Already before her eyes there lies the image of rich, bright-coloured fruit, that leads to temptation:

In green emerald baskets were  
Sun-red apples, streaked and fair;  
Here the nectarine and peach  
And ripe plum lay, and on each  
The bloom rested everywhere.

Grapes were hanging overhead  
Purple, pale, and ruby-red ;  
And in panniers all around  
Yellow melons shone, fresh found,  
With the dew upon them spread.

The temptation with the fruits is a recollection gained from Keightley's *Fairy Mythology*.<sup>7</sup> Further, there lay a more homely source, Hone's *Every Day Book*, which is known to have been one of her favourite childhood volumes.<sup>8</sup> From that delightful miscellany she could have found many cries like that of the goblin men :

Come buy our orchard fruits,  
Come buy, come buy,

from the call of Autolycus to those of the London street criers. Her knowledge of the ballads—and, like Dante Gabriel, she was a ballad reader—gave her a number of suggestions in detail ; while the ' wombats ' of which she drew a competent pencil drawing were derived from personal observation in the Zoological Gardens.<sup>9</sup> Much else must have been gathered out of her memories and caught by her capacity of poetic creation into the unity of this poem. Without further data one cannot trace the working of that forming process of the imagination. Yet it is not without significance that the two central motives of this poem, the temptation of a sister, and the attraction and danger of all that delights the senses, are important throughout her secular poetry. The sister theme, found frequently in her ballad poetry, recurs with the accompaniment of irony and humour in *Commonplace*.

The other poems in *Goblin Market* are lyrics ; many of these possess an originality of atmosphere unequalled by any woman poet of the century. In a number of pieces, *Cousin Kate*, *Noble Sisters*, and particularly in *Maude Clare* and *Sister Maudie* she uses the ballad form with poignant and tragic themes and a consciousness that the ballad demands quick and allusive presentation. A love motive dominates a number of the most memorable poems. It is unnecessary to assume that the prosaic figure of Charles Bagot Cayley inspired these haunting pieces : enough that somehow Christina Rossetti possessed herself of the experience which lies in them. In *A Birthday*

(' My heart is like a singing bird ') she uses imagery exotic and oriental, caught from *The Song of Songs* and *The Arabian Nights*, to express a moment of exultant acceptance of love. All the other pieces dwell in the memory or the denial of that moment. So in *Echo*, one of the keenest lyrics in this volume :

Yet come to me in dreams, that I may live  
 My very life again though cold in death :  
 Come back to me in dreams, that I may give  
 Pulse for pulse, breath for breath :  
     Speak low, lean low,  
 As long ago, my love, how long ago.

This sense of a love grown dead leads to world-weariness and a desire for death, and so are produced two of the best-known pieces in the volume, *Up-hill* and *Song* (' When I am dead, my dearest ').

Closely allied to this theme are the nature poems *The First Spring Day*, *Bitter for Sweet*, *Spring*, and *Winter Rain*. Throughout these poems the motive is that out of winter comes spring, and out of spring, winter, with the symbol suggested that in the human heart the spring that turns to winter remains winter, always. Christina Rossetti was a town-child and despite the visits to Somerset she never possessed a wide interest in natural scenery. On occasion she describes detail happily, as she describes the fruit in *Goblin Market* and flowers in *Another Spring* :

I'd have my crocuses at once,  
 My leafless pink mezerions,  
     My chill-veined snow-drops, choicer yet  
     My white or azure violet,  
 Leaf-nested primrose ; anything  
     To blow at once, not late.

But usually nature is for her not a theme for description but a symbol, an image of warmth and cold, of sun and frost, of hope followed by despair. In thus avoiding the complex emotions which the romantics had found in nature she gives to her poems the poignant simplicity of a medieval ' seasons ' poem. True, she has added more symbol, but such a poem as *Bitter for Sweet* seems to retain a medieval simplicity in the central theme,

however dim and far-reaching are the ultimate symbolic implications :

Summer is gone with all its roses,  
Its sun and perfumes and sweet flowers,  
Its warm air and refreshing showers :  
And even Autumn closes.

Yea, Autumn's chilly self is going,  
And Winter comes which is yet colder ;  
Each day the hoar-frost waxes bolder,  
And the last buds cease blowing.

Already in 1862 one section of her volume is set apart for *Devotional Pieces* ; later this interest will absorb entirely the secular, bright-coloured, poignant images which figure in *Goblin Market*. As a prelude to this section stands *The Convent Threshold*, which would seem to be the answer of Christina Rossetti's piety to *The Blessed Damsel*. In this keen dramatic monologue love is no compensation for the loss of heaven :

You sinned with me a pleasant sin :  
Repent with me, for I repent.

The devotional poems conquer the difficult problem of conveying mystical experience in poetical form, which can only be achieved by arresting the mind of the reader with an adequate imagery, and by resolving devoutness and mysticism into the terms of normal activity. This she achieves in such poems as *A Better Resurrection*, which possesses a greater simplicity than the work of the seventeenth century religious poets but does not lack their urgency. Two poems stand out for their originality of conception, *The Three Enemies* and *Sleep at Sea*. In the first she converts the temptation theme which she frequently uses into dramatic conversations of the soul with the Flesh, the World, and the Devil. So the Flesh asks, ' Sweet, thou art pale ', and the soul replies :

More pale to see,  
Christ hung upon the cruel tree  
And bore His Father's wrath for me.

*Sleep at Sea* is as if the most eerie elements of Coleridge's ship of dead men had been isolated from *The Ancient Mariner* and applied to the purposes of religious allegory. It has the same



compactness as Cowper's *The Castaway*, the same unflinching strength in the narrative.

Disappointment must attend a reading of her second volume, *The Prince's Progress*, which, with Dante Gabriel's promptings, she published in 1866. The same motives predominate as in *Goblin Market*—the sister theme, the lost-love theme, temptation poems, love-ballad poems, nature 'seasons' poems, devotional poems, and the narrowness of interest, already a marked feature of her poetry, gains emphasis. The most sustained piece is the title poem *The Prince's Progress*. Its theme is of a bridegroom prince who sets out to meet his bride, but delays so long by the way that when he arrives it is but to find that she is dead, and her maidens sing to him the lyric which is the most moving feature of the poem :

Too late for love, too late for joy,  
Too late, too late !  
You loitered on the road too long,  
You trifled at the gate.

The piece loses much of its effect by diffuseness ; the succession of the prince's delays has a monotony which is not dissipated until the concluding lyric. This defect lies largely in the origin of the poem. The lyric 'Too late, too late' was in 1863 a separate poem and was published independently in *Macmillan's Magazine*.<sup>10</sup> Later, at Dante Gabriel's suggestion, this was attached to the narrative of the Prince's journey which is described with a Pre-Raphaelite, even dilatory, emphasis on detail. The result is a lack of unity and a suggestion of moral banality, both absent from *Goblin Market*. In the same volume is the lyric *Songs in a Cornfield*, a poem admired by Swinburne, which repeats the motive of *The Prince's Progress* in rustic setting. It has the fresh simplicity which the somewhat laboured allegory of the longer poem has missed :

If he comes to-day  
He will find her weeping ;  
If he comes to-morrow  
He will find her sleeping ;  
If he comes the next day,  
He'll not find her at all,  
He may tear his curling hair  
Beat his breast and call.

Despite similarities with *Goblin Market*, this volume has an increased emphasis on personal weariness and distress which now appears more persistently and penetrates deeper. In *Life and Death* she demands an annihilation of all that is life in a desire for rest :

Life is not sweet. One day it will be sweet  
 To shut our eyes and die ;  
 Nor feel the wild flowers blow, nor birds dart by  
 With flitting butterfly,  
 Nor grass grown long above our heads and feet,  
 Nor hear the happy lark that soars sky-high,  
 Nor sigh that spring is fleet and summer fleet,  
 Nor mark the waxing wheat,  
 Nor know who sits in our accustomed seat.

Elsewhere, in *What would I Give?* and *Autumn*, a more distinctly personal element is added to this pessimism. *Memory* is the only poem in the volume where this sickness of the spirit emerges into original poetic expression. The theme attaches itself to that motive of lost love and broken betrothal which pursues all her love poetry, but it is maintained with such strong and consistent imagery that the poem has the lucid clarity of a single symbol. The imagery is one which she has used before, and so is the motive, but it is represented with freshness and urgency :

I have a room whereinto no one enters  
 Save I myself alone :  
 There sits a blessed memory on a throne,  
 There my life centres.  
 While winter comes and goes—oh tedious comer !—  
 And while its nip-wind blows ;  
 While bloom the bloodless lily and warm rose  
 Of lavish summer.  
 If any should force entrance he might see there  
 One buried yet not dead,  
 Before whose face I no more bow my head  
 Or bend my knee there ;  
 But often in my worn life's autumn weather  
 I watch there with clear eyes,  
 And think how it will be in Paradise  
 When we're together.

As *Goblin Market* had already shown, one of Christina Rossetti's most delightful powers was to play with the images that delight children and use them for the purposes of the imagination. In *Sing-Song* (1872) she uses this same fancy, but for childish purposes. The poems vary from nursery rhymes to poems of innocence comparable with those of Blake if indeed not definitely influenced by him. A moral element is often allowed to intrude as in this, the shortest of her pieces :

Seldom 'can't'  
Seldom 'don't'  
Never 'shan't'  
Never 'won't.'

In compensation there are nonsense pieces such as 'If a pig wore a wig', and brief studies such as 'Who has seen the wind?' Christina Rossetti published this volume when childhood verse and nonsense verse were beginning to gain popularity. Her volume is a notable one in that development. It shows too that the *Goblin Market* element in her mind is not dead, but that unfortunately it is separated from her main imaginative purposes.

In 1875 *Goblin Market* and *The Prince's Progress* were reprinted as one volume, with a few omissions and with a number of new poems added. *A Pageant and other Poems*, the last volume before Dante Gabriel's death, appeared in 1881. The title poem is a miniature morality play on the months, developed out of a series of earlier poems on the seasons. The piece has something of the playful fancy found in the earlier work, but in an attenuated form, as if here were gathered only the shadows of more youthful imaginings. The volume as a whole confirms this impression of ever-increasing seriousness not unmingled with morbidity. Its outstanding expression can be found in the poetic allegory, *A Ballad of Boding*, where in a dream the poet sees three ships—one of Love, filled with revel and feasting; one, the ship of the Worm, of wealth and strife; and a third, a ship of Suffering without brightness or display :

Their sails were patched and rent,  
Their masts were bent,  
In peril of their lives they worked and went.  
For them no feast was spread,

No soft luxurious bed  
Scented and white,  
No crown or sceptre hung in sight.

The allegory is a simple one : the Love ship and the Worm ship go down, but the third survives the storms. The poetic manipulation of this theme lifts it out of the commonplace. As has already been seen in *Sleep at Sea*, Christina Rossetti's mind dwelt on some dream seascape, aroused by memories of *The Ancient Mariner*, from whose eeriness arose symbols and images which she mingled with memories of her childhood reading in *Perils of Flood and Field* and fashioned into her poems.

This volume marks her increased interest in the sonnet form ; she issues two sequences, *Monna Innominata* and *Later Life*, along with a number of miscellaneous sonnets. It was a natural development ; the family letters reveal that the Rossetti children used the sonnet as a literary exercise, while Italian reading and Dante Gabriel's notable example, coupled with that of Mrs. Browning, would all lend encouragement. Like Dante Gabriel, Christina Rossetti keeps to the rhyme of the Petrarchan sonnet form, though she pays little attention to the balance of octave and sextet and other niceties of structure. She explains the theme of *Monna Innominata* in an introductory note. She imagines a lady, of the Provençal Renaissance period, loved by a poet as Beatrice and Laura were later loved, and herself sharing her lover's poetic aptitude, ' while the barrier between them might be one held sacred by both, yet not such as to render mutual love incompatible with mutual honour '. She suggests that the theme would have suited Mrs. Browning had she been ' unhappy instead of happy '. Despite this dramatic setting, little pretence at historical detail intrudes into the poems, and the revelation of Christina Rossetti's own moods soon becomes their dominating purpose. From the early sonnet,

I wish I could remember that first day,  
First hour, first moment of your meeting me,

to the last beautiful sonnet,

Youth gone, and beauty gone if ever there  
Dwelt beauty in so poor a face as this,

she reveals in simple, poignant verses the moods of a love that is persistent but unfulfilled. She is removed from the Elizabethan tradition by infrequency of conceit, and by an increased earnestness. Yet, despite her simplicity, imagery enters freely, and at times she allows a Shakespearian gesture in vocabulary, a play and antithesis in words. This occurs in the sextet to the sonnet in which she invites her lover to take another love if it will add to his happiness :

For if I did not love you, it might be  
That I should grudge you some one dear delight ;  
But since the heart is yours that was mine own,  
Your pleasure is my pleasure, right my right,  
Your honourable freedom makes me free,  
And you companioned I am not alone.

She never revealed her poetical autobiography more fully than in this sequence, where she explores the moods of one who desires love, who knows of its awakening, but who has known not of its fulfilment but only of memories and imaginings.

*Later Life* is less a sequence than a miscellaneous collection of sonnets, though a certain unity is gained by the prevalence of religious themes. It is the aftermath of *Monna Innominata*, the renunciation of earthly love for spiritual salvation. The Elizabethan intrusions in the earlier sequence have disappeared ; one seems to sense an increased severity and distress :

So tired am I, so weary of to-day,  
So unrefreshed from foregone weariness.

Occasionally a more genial imagination lingers to give a keen and successful interpretation to the religious theme. Usually this occurs in poems where the personal element and the emphasis on weariness have been obviated, as in *Sonnet 10* ('Tread softly ! all the earth is holy ground').

*A Pageant* (1881) shows a fuller preoccupation with religious themes, and the last volume, *Verses* (1893), published in the year before her death and under the direction of 'the Tract Committee' of the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, is entirely religious and devotional in character. Nowhere in this later religious verse does she show the imaginative power which sustained *Sleep at Sea*, *The Three Enemies*, and *A Ballad*

of *Boding*. Her distinctive achievement had been to reveal in poetical terms the conflict of the world and the spirit in the religious soul. In this later verse the spirit has conquered : the Church, its feasts and fasts, are celebrated, and the relation of the worshipper to God. Yet neither imagery nor emotion converts these poems into great religious verse such as that of Donne or Herbert. Even when she records experience she lacks the reality of the earlier pieces and approaches at times the luxury of spiritual self-flagellation. Influences are difficult to detect, and it would be well to assume that most of these poems arose more from genuine and deeply felt experience, even if the poetic representation is incomplete. Sometimes she uses an antithesis not unlike that found in some of Donne's religious verse, as in *Ash Wednesday* :

My God, my God, have mercy on my sin,  
 For it is great ; and if I should begin  
 To tell it all, the day would be too small  
 To tell it in.

My God, Thou wilt have mercy on my sin  
 For Thy Love's sake : yea, if I should begin  
 To tell This all, the day would be too small  
 To tell it in.

She also has in some of her poems a movement imitated from medieval verse :

The twig teacheth,  
 The moth preacheth.

In the main the imagery and the numbers do not differ widely from those which she had previously employed.

Such was the verse that Christina Rossetti published ; but two years after her death William Michael, in *New Poems* (1896), contrived to make a large volume out of previously unpublished pieces, without issuing anything which adds substantially to Christina's reputation. Even the faithful *Athenæum* administered a rebuke when the volume was first published, and William Michael's only defence was that he had left some pieces in manuscript still unpublished. In 1904 he issued a complete edition of Christina Rossetti's poems, with a further selection from her unpublished work. Brotherly piety

can seldom have rendered a greater disservice than did William Michael Rossetti in this collected edition. The rearrangement of the poems, the addition of so many poems which Christina Rossetti had not herself published, the absence of a complete title index, and the solemn, trite memoir all help to obscure the poetry that lies concealed. To turn from this collected volume to the original volumes of 1862 and 1866, adorned with Dante Gabriel's illustrations, is to gain a new perspective on Christina Rossetti's work. She had made her individual contribution to later nineteenth century poetry. Few writers united so fully the two main and usually distinct movements of the period—the poetry with Pre-Raphaelite *décor* and the poetry of religious sensibility. In however narrow a range, there exist in her work both the enthusiasms which began with Rossetti and those which find their ultimate source in the Oxford Movement.

1. The *Rossetti Papers (1862 to 1870)*, W. M. Rossetti (1903), have a number of letters; these can be supplemented by *The Family Letters of C. G. Rossetti*, ed. W. M. Rossetti (1908), which has a brief biographical notice. The early biographies are disappointing. H. T. M. Bell's study, *C. G. Rossetti* (1898), is criticism with meagre biography. Elizabeth L. Cary, *The Rossettis* (1907), deals only incidentally with Christina Rossetti. Ellen A. Proctor's modest *Brief Memoir* (1895) has details of Christina's early reading not mentioned elsewhere. The *Poetical Works* (1904) have a memoir by W. M. Rossetti. The centenary year brought two new volumes; Mary F. Sandar, *The Life of C. Rossetti* (1930); and Dorothy M. Stuart, *Christina Rossetti* (1930), a discriminating study. For a study of the verse see also *C. Rossetti and her Poetry*, Edith Birkhead (1931), and *C. Rossetti*, Fredgond Shove (1931). The article by Richard Garnett in the *Dictionary of National Biography* is vaguely hostile; he over-emphasizes the melancholy and morbidity of the poems. Watts-Dunton has a notice in *The Athenæum*, Jan. 5, 1895. See also Alice Meynell, preface to *Poems, C. G. Rossetti* (1910), and the note on the biographies of D. G. Rossetti. For *Goblin Market* see B. I. Evans, *Modern Language Review* (April, 1933).

2. *Family Letters*, p. 31.

3. *Ibid.*, p. 103.

4. These included: No. 1, *Dreamland, An End*; No. 2, *A Pause of Thought, Six Roses for the Flush of Youth, A Testimony*; No. 3, *Repining*.

5. *Family Letters*, p. 31.

6. See A. Proctor's *Brief Memoir* (1895).

7. *D. G. Rossetti*, vol. I, p. 44, W. M. Rossetti (1895).

8. *Life*, Mackenzie Bell.

9. *Family Letters*, facing p. 36.

10. *Macmillan's Magazine*, 1863, p. 68.

CHAPTER IV  
WILLIAM MORRIS

ROSSETTI never influenced a man more unlike himself than William Morris (1834-1896).<sup>1</sup> His family was of Welsh descent, although it retained nothing of Welsh tradition. His father, a successful bill-broker, who had unexpected luck in a copper share deal, represented that upper middle-class tradition which can educate a son at Marlborough and Exeter College, Oxford, and leave him with a competence. The domestic atmosphere of Morris's home was one of narrow evangelicalism, but his school brought him into contact with men affected by the Anglo-Catholicism of the Oxford Movement, and he entered Oxford with the determination to become a priest.

Oxford was the determining period of his life, and it is in these years that we meet for the first time the baffling difficulty present in all discussion of Morris's mental development. The outward facts of his life are known, but the inner, spiritual values remain a secret. He is as noisy and active as the wind, but once he has passed we cannot trace his passage. We know that Oxford deepened his medieval romanticism, through a study of Malory and Tennyson. It aroused in him a hatred of the classics, and still more of the way in which they were taught. It gave him a lifelong friend and associate, a young Birmingham man, Edward Burne-Jones, the painter. Something, too, happened in these years to his faith; but Morris was not in the Victorian tradition which regarded the discussion of belief as one of the main purposes of poetry. He lost interest in religion, but he kept quiet about it, and turned his attention to other things. He had already written poems 'but he did not treat the accomplishment very seriously. 'Well, if this is poetry,' he said once during this period, 'it is very easy to write.'

It was in this unsettled period (1855-1856), the end of his Oxford career, that Morris first came under Rossetti's influence. He and Burne-Jones had talked things out during a long holiday in France in the summer of 1855; Burne-Jones was to



be a painter, Morris an architect. A ' Brotherhood ' was to be formed on the model of the Pre-Raphaelite Movement, and, in imitation of *The Germ*, a journal, *The Oxford and Cambridge Magazine*, was to be published. Rossetti himself was gained as a contributor, and his *Burden of Nineveh*, *The Blessed Damozel*, and *The Staff and Scrip* appeared in *The Magazine*. In the period 1855-1857 Rossetti was the dominating influence in Morris's life. When Burne-Jones challenged him with too much subordination to Rossetti he replied, ' I have got beyond that. I want to imitate Gabriel as much as I can.' Rossetti told him that every art and every occupation was inferior to painting, and within a year Morris had left architecture to devote himself to painting. It was at the end of this youthful, impulsive period that he published in 1858, at the age of twenty-four, his volume of poems, *The Defence of Guenevere*.

Nine years separate *The Defence of Guenevere* from Morris's second work in poetry, and within that decade he found the practical activities which were to fill the greater part of his very energetic life. The occupation of rooms with Burne-Jones in London, and later his own marriage in 1859, to Jane Burden, who appears in so many of Rossetti's paintings, led him to think of the beauty and utility of all household decoration. He concentrated his energy on reorganizing the Brotherhood into Morris, Marshall, Faulkner & Co., which commenced business, on a very inadequate capital, in 1861. He abandoned painting just as previously he had abandoned architecture, and became a craftsman. Mural decoration, carving, stained glass, furniture, wall-papers, carpets, chintzes, all were within the final activities of the firm. It is outside the present purpose to discuss the effect that the work of Morris and his associates had upon middle-class Victorian taste; enough that for a number of years it exhausted even his amazing capacity for work. His return to poetry is marked by the publication of *The Life and Death of Jason* in 1867 and of *The Earthly Paradise* (1868-1870).

By 1870 Morris was a successful man of business; his inherited income had decreased, but his losses had been compensated by the success of his enterprise. This removal of financial stress shows itself by Morris's entry into a number of fresh activities. In 1871 he purchased Kelmscott Manor

House, a residence on the upper Thames, intimately associated with the work of his middle years. He commenced, too, in the autumn of 1868, the study of Icelandic literature under the guidance of Eiríkr Magnússon. Morris was immediately attracted by the qualities of Icelandic literature, and with Magnússon he executed a number of translations, including a prose version of the *Volsunga Saga* in 1870 and *Three Northern Love Stories* in 1875. A journey to Iceland in 1871, followed by a second journey in 1873, aroused in him still more deeply the conception of the imaginative possibilities of the Northern myths. His journals of these two journeys are the most intimate documents of Morris's yet published.<sup>2</sup> He first realized the possibilities of the Northern stories for his own poetry in *The Lovers of Gudrun*, a rendering of the *Laxdaela Saga*, which he had included as one of *The Earthly Paradise* stories. Further, with a verse re-fashioning of the *Volsunga Saga*, issued as *Sigurd the Volsung* in 1876, he produced his most considerable poetic work. Icelandic influences, although they dominate this period, were not all-absorbing; in 1872 he published *Love is Enough*, a dramatic poem fashioned on the pattern of the medieval morality play.

Within the decade 1870-1880, which marks these new poetic interests, may be traced a number of new developments in Morris's life and outlook. He had long exhausted the influence of Rossetti in his poetry, and he was now forced to an open breach with him. Rossetti had been a joint tenant at Kelmscott in 1871; it was an arrangement which resulted in subdued mutual irritation. Further, Rossetti had been a very inactive partner in Morris & Co., and, with Madox Brown and Marshall, insisted on a financial compensation which Morris regarded as excessive. The friendship of 1855 was finally lost in lengthy and unpleasant legal negotiation in 1875; the leadership of Rossetti had long disappeared from Morris's mind and now his friendship passed from his life. In the same period Morris, who had been a poet and a craftsman, developed into a man of affairs. The change is an almost imperceptible one. He was led first by his anger at the 'restoration' of ancient buildings, into public controversy and into the treasurership of the Society for the Protection of Ancient Buildings. This seemed only a natural extension of his earlier interests, but the Eastern

Question of 1876 drew him away from his crafts to the world of politics. The Eastern crisis led him into personal contact with Radical leaders, and in 1879 he was Treasurer of the National Liberal League. Radicalism held him for a time, but soon he found himself searching for some more fundamental solution of social difficulties. The biographical information is again perplexing; the facts are in our possession but the mental adjustments, the conflict, if there was a conflict, remain unknown. He was at the height of his professional prosperity: he was to decorate with damasks the walls of the Reception Rooms at St. James's Palace and to adorn the hangings of the Throne; his college was to make him a Fellow; he had new, ambitious poetic themes ready to be attempted. But something urged him to leave this spectacular triumph and, in January 1883, register himself as a member of the Social Democratic Federation. It may have needed a struggle; but it would be like the man to do it light-heartedly, almost carelessly, because it seemed to him the obvious thing to do.

It was the natural political consummation of his other activities. His whole life had been a protest against the production of goods for profit without consideration of the craftsman, or of the beauty and utility of the thing produced. 'Time was when everyone that made anything, made it a work of art besides a useful piece of goods; *and it gave them pleasure to do it.* Whatever I doubt, I have no doubt of that.' For twenty years he had attempted to persuade the rich and the middle classes to retain in their houses only the beautiful and the useful; in that task he had done all that it was within him to do. At the same time he had watched the ugly cities where the purposeless labour of men who were not craftsmen produced work that was shoddy or pretentious. His socialism was an emotional protest against this world, a logical outcome of Ruskin's influence on his mental activity. He summarizes his sentiments and Ruskin's place within them in a May Day article in *Justice* in 1896, the year of his death:

I cannot help saying, by the way, how deadly dull the world would have been twenty years ago but for Ruskin! It was through him that I learned to give form to my discontent. . . . Apart from the desire to produce beautiful things, the leading passion of my life has been and is hatred of modern civilization. . . .

The struggles of mankind for many ages had produced nothing but this sordid, aimless, ugly confusion. Was it all to end in a counting-house on the top of a cinder-heap, with Podsnap's drawing-room in the offing, and a Whig Committee dealing out champagne to the rich and margarine to the poor in such convenient proportions as would make all men contented together, though the pleasure of the eye was gone from the world and the place of Homer was to be taken by Huxley ?

The whole Pre-Raphaelite group was in protest against the Victorian age ; Morris alone attempted in the world of politics to effect structural changes in society. He had to learn, in a severe school, the difficulties of practical political action, and he soon became aware of the wilder associates who surround a leader in a revolutionary party. The crisis of his socialist career came in 1884, when he quarrelled with H. M. Hyndman and left the Social Democratic Federation, to inaugurate the Socialist League with *The Commonweal* as its journal. Hyndman, writing years later, was able to give a just estimate of the effect of Morris's entry into English socialism :

For Morris was even too eager to take his full share in the unpleasant part of our public work, and speedily showed that he meant to work in grim earnest on the same level as the rank and file of our party. That was Morris's way from the first. He was never satisfied unless he was doing things which, to say the truth, he was little fitted for, and others of coarser fibre could do much better than he.<sup>3</sup>

Morris was surrounded with strange companions in the Socialist League, and he was committed to a policy of extreme socialism. Friction with the police was not infrequent, and in 1885 he found himself in the dock of a Thames police-court, though it was his temper rather than his politics that had brought him there. 'What are you ?' asked the magistrate. Rage overcame habitual modesty : 'I am an artist and a literary man, pretty well known, I think, throughout Europe.' Despite this spirited reply, Morris realized during these years that scuffling and street-corner oratory would not initiate that England of Utility and Beauty which dwelt in his mind. He witnessed 'Bloody Sunday' in November 1887, and saw from the scenes in Trafalgar Square how dangerous the indiscriminate use of force might become. He came to feel that education

must precede any adequate revolutionary movement, and that the way to the ideal state could not come up suddenly with the dawn as he had once imagined. He grew more tolerant of other political methods, of the Fabians and the Independent Labour Party. Mr. G. B. Shaw has furnished me with an impression of Morris's mood in these years :

Morris's attitude towards Fabianism was at first one of very strong distaste for its official and administrative detail and its adaptation to the sort of average public character with which he had no patience. But after experimenting pretty exhaustively with the Socialists who sympathized with him in this, and finding that they were hopeless Impossibilists, his great practical sense came into play. He dropped the Socialist League, which immediately perished, and declared that he had now no doubt that Socialism would come about in Sidney Webb's way, but that, as that way did not offer him a job at which he could be as useful as he could be at his own artistic activities, he would return to them, and content himself with keeping the cause of ultimate Communism alive in the little Hammersmith Socialist Society which had grown up round his house. And in that attitude he remained until his death.

This last period adds little to the record of his achievement in poetry, and yet it is full of varied literary productivity much of which is in prose. His lectures on the position of the craftsman and the relation of literature to art, were collected in a number of volumes : *Hopes and Fears for Art* (1882) ; *The Aims of Art* (1887) ; *Signs of Change* (1888), with a posthumous volume, *Lectures on Socialism* (1915). His most original work in prose is a series of prose romances : *The House of the Wolfings* (1889) ; *The Story of the Glittering Plain* (1891) ; *The Wood Beyond the World* (1894) ; *Child Christopher* (1895) ; *The Well at the World's End* (1896) ; and the romances published posthumously, *The Water of the Wondrous Isles* (1897), *The Story of the Sundering Flood* (1898). With these are two prose romances with a definitely political bias, *A Dream of John Ball* (1888) and the *News from Nowhere* (1891), a volume which for political rather than from literary reasons has gained a European currency. He added in these years to the crafts which he had mastered. After his withdrawal from active socialism in 1890 he founded at Hammersmith the Kelmscott

Press for the production of finely printed books. The press produced over fifty volumes between 1891 and 1898 when it was wound up by Morris's executors. The poetical work in these years is less significant. In 1875 he translated Virgil into English verse as *The Aeneids* ; in 1887 *The Odyssey*, and in 1895 *Beowulf* with the assistance of A. J. Wyatt. He gathered together a number of old pieces and added some new ones to his last volume of original verse, *Poems by the Way*, issued from his own Kelmscott Press in 1891. In 1896 he died. The study which follows, confined as it is to Morris's poetry, cannot do justice to his whole life and personality, one of the most active and varied in the later nineteenth century.

Morris broke into English poetry at the age of twenty-four with *The Defence of Guenevere*, a volume which was a fresh contribution to Victorian romanticism. No volume by Rossetti had yet appeared ; it was four years before Christina Rossetti was to publish *Goblin Market*, and seven years before Swinburne entered effectively into English poetry. The volume in which every poem is of medieval suggestion shows Rossetti's influence, but Morris has developed in his own way under this stimulus. Rossetti had kept his own age out of poetry, but Morris contrived to keep himself out as well. Every poem, except the charming aubade, *Summer Dawn*, is impersonal. 'I abominate introspective poetry,' he once wrote, and here at an age when most poets are undertaking self-scrutinies, and in a decade when introspection was the dominant motive of poetry, Morris brusquely shows the door to all subjective discussion of mind and soul. Sentiment, action, and passion are substituted as motives, and these are revealed on a medieval background, arising from suggestions of Malory and Froissart, and presented in lyric, narrative and dramatic forms.

The lyrics arise mainly from moods of magic, embroidered with Pre-Raphaelite device, memories of that beautiful, unreal world of dream medievalism which exists in Keats's *La Belle Dame sans Merci*. *The Blue Closet*, *Near Avalon*, *The Gilliflower of Gold*, *The Tune of Seven Towers*, *Rapunzel* and others were airy, gossamer designs which Morris was never again to attempt. Occasionally as with *The Blue Closet* he is writing with one of Rossetti's pictures as a starting place for his imagination. At times his lyrics seem mere tunes, pattern

without rational content, and yet in Morris the insubstantial is never the meaningless. He was once challenged on the refrain in the lyric *Two Red Roses Across the Moon* :

There was a lady lived in a hall,  
Large in the eyes, and slim and tall ;  
And ever she sung from noon to noon,  
*Two red roses across the moon.*

It seemed that the refrain was a melodious but meaningless intrusion. Morris at once replied that the roses and the moon comprised the emblem on the shield of the Knight : what might appear to the reader as a mere collection of pretty words was all as solid to his mind as a row of bricks.

The dramatic and narrative pieces which are distinct in mood from the lyrics are of two types : in the one, the memory of Malory prevails and with it the romantic glamour of chivalry ; in the other, the influence of Froissart, known to Morris in Lord Berners's translation, introduces into the poems the grim, ugly reality of war. These two contrasting moods remained with him throughout his life. He looked on the medieval world as bright and clean but he knew that it could be brutal and cruel. The whole of this poetry, whether the original suggestion is from Malory or Froissart, has a tense and piteous quality, full of a penetrating compassion for the tragedy and affliction of those who have suffered deeply. Swinburne, commenting on one of these poems, has written a passage which gives the tone of all of them : ' It has not been constructed at all ; the parts hardly hold together ; it has need of joists and screws, props and rafters. . . . But where among other and older poets of his time and country is one comparable for perception and expression of tragic truth, of subtle and noble, terrible and piteous things ? Where a touch of passion at once so broad and so sure ? ' <sup>4</sup>

His method, influenced by Browning's practice in the dramatic monologue, is to seize a single episode and manipulate it freely so that the full human poignancy of the situation can be revealed. Unlike Tennyson and Browning, he is not embarrassed by moral preconceptions, but is free to develop character and scene for their own sentiment and value. So in the Arthurian pieces, *The Defence of Guenevere* reveals the

Queen fevered and distraught in a long ordeal of inquisition by Gawain and other Knights; *King Arthur's Tomb* is a reconstruction of the last encounter of Guenevere and Launcelot, a portrayal of passionate memories and the maddening onslaughts of repentance; *Sir Galahad*, the third Arthurian poem of importance, is a study of the knight who chose the sacredness of the San Greal quest and doubted temporarily whether he had not lost too much in forsaking the human pleasures which the other knights enjoyed. The poetic quality of the Arthurian poems can be seen from the opening of *The Defence of Guenevere*:

But, knowing now that they would have her speak,  
She threw her wet hair backward from her brow,  
Her hand close to her mouth touching her cheek,

As though she had had there a shameful blow,  
And feeling it shameful to feel ought but shame  
All through her heart, yet felt her cheek burned so.

The utter impatience with all introductory matter and the sudden ruthless emphasis on the central poignant situation is characteristic of Morris throughout these poems.

The poems whose suggestion arises directly or indirectly from Froissart have a greater economy of effect: they rely less on character, more on the very efficacy of their dramatic setting. Of these *Sir Peter Harpdon's End*, the most considerable piece in the whole volume, is a blank verse play set out in three scenes. The structure is a little too mechanical for successful dramatic unity, but the three main figures, Peter, Lambert and Alice, show the courage, cunning and suffering of the medieval world. Here lies the freshness of the poem: the medieval world had for over a century yielded suggestions for romantic sentiment, the dim glamour of far-away things, but Morris now shows a medieval life, fresh in its own setting, full of its own humanity. The same values yield themselves to more concentrated expression in the narrative poem, *The Haystack in the Floods*. The incident is of Morris's invention, but the background is suggested by Froissart. Robert and his Jehane are overtaken by the tyrant Godmar from whom they are fleeing. The man is taken and killed, and the woman, who has watched her lover die, led back to ignominy. Morris



insists with an emphasis derived from Browning's *Porphyria's Lover* upon the cruelty of this medieval world. He thus describes Robert's death :

With a start  
Up Godmar rose, thrust them apart ;  
From Robert's throat he loosed the bands  
Of silk and mail ; with empty hands  
Held out, she stood and gazed, and saw  
The long bright blade without a flaw  
Glide out from Godmar's sheath, his hand  
In Robert's hair ; she saw him bend  
Back Robert's head ; she saw him send  
The thin steel down ; the blow told well,  
Right backward the knight Robert fell,  
And moan'd as dogs do, being half dead,  
Unwitting, as I deem : so then  
Godmar turn'd grinning to his men,  
Who ran, some five or six, and beat  
His head to pieces at their feet.

The impression gained here by direct emphasis is enhanced by the ironic undertone of the conclusion :

This was the parting that they had  
Beside the haystack in the floods.

Similarly in *Concerning Geffray Teste Noire*, a poem which has a closer relationship to Froissart, he reveals suddenly and grotesquely the pain and horror which inevitably accompany war, even war with the superficial trappings of chivalry.

*The Defence of Guenevere* was a first volume of unbounded promise ; the freshness of outlook, the prosodic and technical variety, and the keen, impassioned humanity all suggested the advent of a new poet of magnitude. The prosody was unusually varied and adventurous ; *terza rima* in *The Defence of Guenevere*, iambic quatrains in *King Arthur's Tomb* and *Sir Galahad*, dramatic blank verse in *Sir Peter Harpdon's End*, the octosyllabic managed without its fatal facility in *The Haystack in the Floods*, and varied lyrical measures, including the *In Memoriam* stanza in *Golden Wings*. Morris never fulfilled that promise ; he achieved much both in poetry and in other activities, but he never attained all that *The Defence of Guenevere* suggests that he had within him. His whole poetical fibre slackened ; <sup>5</sup> the fevered passion and bitter wisdom of this

youthful work pass into the more placid story-telling of *The Earthly Paradise* period. Swinburne, in a picturesque passage in one of his letters,<sup>6</sup> has described this sweet, untroubled manner which had lost all the splendid poignancy of the early poems :

His Muse is like Homer's Trojan women ; she drags her robes as she walks. I really think any Muse (when she is neither resting nor flying) ought to tighten her girdle, tuck up her skirts, and step out. It is better than Tennyson's short-winded and artificial concision—but there is such a thing as a swift and spontaneous style. Top's <sup>7</sup> is spontaneous and slow ; and, especially my ear hungers for more force and variety of sound in the verse. It looks as if he purposely avoided all strenuous emotion or strength of music in thought and word ; and so when set by other work as good his seems hardly done in thorough earnest.

One can register the change, but one cannot explain it, for it is easier to weave explanations around an introspective soul who for ever tells you why he does things than around an active personality who is too busy doing things ever to explain why they are done. Possibly he lost the stimulus of Rossetti, and from this loss the emotional temper of his poetry suffered as the art of Millais had done. It may be that his craft activities occupied so much of his mind that poetry became a pastime ; he could weave patterns of beautiful words with the same skill as he could design the pattern of a carpet, and with the same degree of emotional stress. Whatever the cause, the middle period in his poetry suggests a conscious removal of his mind not only from his own century but from all the strenuous moments of human passion and suffering.

It was in this rarefied atmosphere that he constructed *The Earthly Paradise* (1868–1870). In the Prologue he removes himself to a mediæval world, a world that is not Rossetti's nor Dante's, but rather Chaucer's, sane, clean, full of the light of common day :

Forget six counties overhung with smoke,  
Forget the snorting steam and piston stroke,  
Forget the spreading of the hideous town ;  
Think rather of the pack-horse on the down,  
And dream of London, small, and white, and clean,  
The clear Thames bordered by its gardens green.

His own function in this world is to relate a story such as a medieval tale-teller at a high table or a minstrel at an inn might have recited, free from the desire to give didactic bias or the emphasis of intricate phrasing. The verses which preface *The Earthly Paradise* seem to show that Morris realized the purpose and the limitation of the design :

The heavy trouble, the bewildering care  
That weighs us down who live and earn our bread,  
These idle verses have no power to bear ;  
So let me sing of names remembered,  
Because they, living not, can ne'er be dead,  
Or long time take their memory quite away  
From us poor singers of an empty day.

Dreamer of dreams, born out of my due time,  
Why should I strive to set the crooked straight ?  
Let it suffice me that my murmuring rhyme  
Beats with light wing against the ivory gate,  
Telling a tale not too importunate  
To those who in the sleepy region stay,  
Lulled by the singer of an empty day.

The whole of *The Earthly Paradise* is held within the closely prescribed frontiers of this world of beauty removed from life. In the Prologue Morris describes how medieval travellers from Norway set out for a land rumoured to possess the enchantment of eternal life. Their journey leads through many distresses to ultimate disillusionment, and as old, weary men they come to an island inhabited by descendants of ancient Greeks. With this background of mellowed sadness rest steals upon them, and they and the medieval Greeks, as old men, wearied of toil, tell each other tales to while the months away. The tales themselves form the central element in *The Earthly Paradise* ; half of them are from classical sources, half from medieval, but they are all told in a medieval manner. Morris, while he interested himself in classical stories, preserved his distaste for classical methods of narration. In writing these stories Morris first chose one with a Greek theme, and *Cupid and Psyche*, one of the most successful tales, was probably the first to be written. He continued with *The Tale of Orpheus and Eurydice*, which he rejected as too weighty. He then attempted to render the quest of the golden fleece, which grew so elaborate

in its detail that it found separate publication as *The Life and Death of Jason*. He continued with *Atalanta's Race*, the story of how Milanion outran Atalanta and thus gained her in marriage; *The Doom of King Acrisius*, a re-rendering of the Perseus story; *The Love of Alcestis*, which tells how Alcestis gave her life for Admetus, the theme used later by Browning in *Balaustion's Adventure*. *The Son of Croesus*, one of the shortest of the classical tales, recounted the death of Atys, and *Pygmalion and the Image* retold the story of the statue which with Venus's aid became a living figure. In *The Death of Paris* he described Paris's visit to Ida to see C  none. *The Story of Acontius and Cydippe* told of the strange wooing of Cydippe by Acontius, a youth of obscure birth. *The Story of Rhodope* recounted how Rhodope became the wife of an Egyptian king. *The Golden Apples* was a brief rendering of the eleventh labour of Hercules. *Bellerophon at Argos* described Bellerophon's adventures at the court of Proteus, and *Bellerophon in Lycia* gave Bellerophon's adventures after he had offended Proteus's Queen. Morris's method was first to read the account of a legend in Lempri  re's *Classical Dictionary* and to amplify this with such sources as were easily available. Once he had the incidents in his mind he closed his source-books and retold the story, changing its proportion, motive, and incident to meet his own mood and the design of *The Earthly Paradise* as a whole.

The medieval stories were drawn from varied originals. Morris knew the *Gesta Romanorum*, and from this he drew themes for *The Proud King* and *The Man Born to be King*. From Mandeville's *Voyage and Travel* he extracted *The Lady of the Land* and *The Watching of the Falcon*. William of Malmesbury's *De Gestis Regum Anglorum* gave him *The Writing on the Image* and *The Ring Given to Venus*. Northern stories he gathered first from English books: *The Fostering of Aslaug* from Thorpe's *Northern Mythology*, and part of *The Land East of the Sun and West of the Moon* from *Yule Tide Stories* by the same author. *The Lovers of Gudrun* showed the beginnings of his own Icelandic reading in the *Laxdaela Saga*. *The Arabian Nights* yielded *The Man Who Never Laughed Again*. *Ogier the Dane* he found in a fourteenth century French romance, *Ogier le Danois*, and *The Hill of Venus*, a rendering of the Tannh  user legend, had an immediate source in Tieck's *Romances*.

The structure of *The Earthly Paradise* is reminiscent of Chaucer's framework for his *Canterbury Tales*. But Chaucer has variety of mood, humour, pathos, ribaldry, and grace ; Morris, though the range of the stories is considerable, is held within a single mood dimly revealed, ' Like an old dream, dreamed in another dream '. Among the shorter stories *The Lady of the Land* shows Morris's power of adorning a simple tale with picturesque detail ; of the more ambitious pieces *Cupid and Psyche*, drawn from Apuleius, is the most evenly successful. His method throughout is separated from the main nineteenth century tradition in poetry. Shelley, Keats, Tennyson, and Browning had all used narrative, but with some ulterior motive ; symbol or allegory or didacticism was mingled into the simple story elements, and mood and sentiment made more complicated and modern. For Morris the tale was simply a tale ; he peddled these beautiful wares, unfettered by allegory, without concentration on mood or character. Nor is the story supported by rich coruscations of imagery : the language is easy like the narrative method. He substitutes for passion and sentiment the thronged pictures which arose easily to his pictorial mind, so that we forget human action in a dim pageantry of inanimate scenes. Yet it must be remembered that the tales are not merely narratives but the monologues of ageing, disillusioned men, told one to the other when glamour and romance, and the aching unrest of high feelings had faded. Morris could advance Chaucer's plea :

Whoso shall telle a tale after a man,  
He moote reherse, as ny as evere he kan.

This slackened pace, consistent with the dramatic purpose, leaves the poem in some distant dreamland where the air is rarefied, the footfall silent, the wind noiseless, and where the reader, isolated from his own life, its philosophy and humour, is left contemplating the dimly mirrored forms of a dream enchantment. Morris has suffered for this apparent placidity, this pronounced reaction from analytical and introspective methods. It was in other ways that poetry was to develop in the closing decades of the century.

One poem in *The Earthly Paradise* stands apart. It is *The Lovers of Gudrun*, Morris's version of the *Laxdaela Saga*, the

one poem in *The Earthly Paradise* based directly on Icelandic sources. Morris achieved little in verse that can compare with this poem. He combated the difficulties of a legend whose outline is tortuous and obscure, and elevated the central theme into a tragic conflict ; and he tightens the whole fabric of his poetry to give it adequate presentation. Within this story we feel some return of the keener human interests present in his early verse ; the dim multi-coloured veil of *The Earthly Paradise* breaks apart, and we see Kiartan, Bodli, and Gudrun, mighty opposites, capable of tragic suffering and the tragic strength of endurance. For Morris found in the Northern literature, beyond a mere collection of stories and a new literary influence, a view of life, heroic, fatalistic, where action dominated thought, and suffering was endured with a dogged, un murmuring acquiescence. He has expressed in a number of lines written in the manuscript of his translation of the *Eyrbyggja Saga* the effect of this northern *Weltanschauung* on his mind :

Tale-teller, who 'twixt fire and snow  
Had heart to turn about and show  
With faint half-smile things great and small  
That in thy fearful land did fall,  
Thou and thy brethren sure did gain  
That thing for which I long in vain,  
That spell, whereby the mist of fear  
Was melted, and your ears might hear  
Earth's voices as they are indeed.  
Well ye have helped me at my need !

The interest in the Northern literature preludes a still wider human interest which gained its expression in politics rather than in poetry. With this intrusion he comes out of the craft-room where in the middle years his beautiful wares have been prepared, and joins with the thought and endeavour of his own century once again. A passage in one of the Lectures <sup>8</sup> recounts an incident which seems a symbol of the changing sympathies of his life :

Look you, as I sit at my work at home, which is at Hammer-smith, close to the river, I often hear go past the window some of that ruffianism of which a good deal has been said in the papers of late, and has been said before at recurring periods. As I hear

the yells and shrieks and all the degradation cast on the glorious tongue of Shakespeare and Milton, as I see the brutal reckless faces and figures go past me, it rouses the recklessness and brutality in me also, and fierce wrath takes possession of me, till I remember, as I hope I mostly do, that it was my good luck only of being born respectable and rich that has put me on this side of the window among delightful books and lovely works of art, and not on the other side, in the empty street, the drink-steeped liquor shops, and the foul degraded lodgings.

He broke the window ; he stepped out into the world ; he came to strange places—the hustings, the police-court, and the dock. It is fortunate that before politics became the dominant expression of this changed mental consciousness he had leisure to give it poetic expression in *Sigurd the Volsung* (1876). He experimented in both rhythm and vocabulary in this poem. Technically the verse may be described as a rhyming couplet of six feet, frequently anapaestic in movement with a hypermetrical syllable before a pause in the middle of the line. It resembles closely in effect the metre of the *Nibelungenlied*, except that Morris has used the anapaest generously in developing the movement of his line. The monotony of the fourteen-syllable line is missing, and for the rhymelessness of blank verse has been substituted a form capable of lyrical strength, strong, adaptable, varied ; its invention and use constitute one of Morris's most considerable prosodic achievements. The vocabulary has strong Anglo-Saxon elements and is coloured by the insertion of words and phrases, such as ' bath of the swan ' for the sea, which look as if they had been paraphrased out of Old English poetry. This contact with Old English verse is strengthened by the frequent use of alliteration. The story is told in four books, of which the first recounts the life of Sigmund, Sigurd's father. The theme here dwells with scenes of horror and incest, grim and inhuman in outline, yet essential to the main narrative as indicating the Volsung tradition from which Sigurd springs. In the second book Morris recounts Sigurd's education by Regin, who knows the secret of the gold of Andvari, and in the moving scenes at its close Sigurd gains supernatural insight into Regin's treachery, kills him, and seizes the treasure. He rides away until he reaches Hindfell, where he awakens Brynhild from an enchanted

sleep and pledges love to her. The third book has an intricate movement, and includes Sigurd's fatal marriage to Gudrun, and Brynhild's marriage to Gunnar the 'Niblung', both achieved by the crooked ways of magic, and it culminates in the death of Sigurd and Brynhild and the passing of Andvari's gold to the 'Niblungs'. The fourth book is Gudrun's revenge. This she achieves, but not before the 'Niblungs' have buried the gold in the Rhine, so that with the death of Gunnar, the last of their race, its secret is lost. The narrative closes as Gudrun plunges into the sea to be carried away to fresh adventures :

Then Gudrun girded her raiment, on the edge of the steep she stood,  
 She looked o'er the shoreless water, and cried out o'er the measureless flood :  
 ' O Sea, I stand before thee ; and I who was Sigurd's wife,  
 By his brightness unforgotten I bid thee deliver my life  
 From the deeds and the longing of days and the lack I have won on earth,  
 And the wrong amended by wrong, and the bitter wrong of my birth.'

Morris found in *Sigurd* much that Keats found in *Hyperion* : the equation of being, set out in terms of myth. The Northern heroes believed in no Earthly Paradise, but in a quiet, strenuous enduring of the worst that life might bring. Morris never allowed this symbolic attraction of the myth to enter into his presentation of the legend, but it remains within his mind, a residuum left after the telling.

Icelandic stories have not entered easily into the imaginative memory which lies behind English poetry. There had been an Icelandic tradition since Gray, but it had not been a popular tradition. The Greek world has had centuries of mental companionship with our national tradition. Prometheus and Hercules, Helen and Ulysses have become names rich in association ; Loki and Odin and Gudrun and Brynhild are comparative strangers. Morris, undaunted by these difficulties, attempts to re-tell the most titanic of all the Icelandic stories, an epic massive and at times inhuman. The importance which Morris attached to the Sigurd story can be seen from a prefatory passage in his prose translation of the *Volsunga*



*Saga* in 1870: 'This is the Great Story of the North which would be to all our race what the Tale of Troy was to the Greeks—to all our race first, and afterwards, when the change of the world has made our race nothing more than a name of what has been—a story too—then should it be to those who came after us no less than the Tale of Troy has been to us.'

Morris's very honesty of purpose entangles him in the poem. As a piece of creative reconstruction the story might be simply that of Sigurd, but as a re-fashioning of a national myth the whole fate of the Volsung house must be displayed. The first book, Sigmund, becomes a poetic overture to the main theme, but its incidents, magical, incestuous, and grotesque, may perturb an imagination accustomed to the more placid outline of the Arthurian tales. The second and third books are relatively compact, but despite unity of theme some unity of emotional interest has been lost. Morris's method may have been right, but its diffuseness robs the poem of that supreme simplicity of outline which allows one in the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* to summarize the central action in a single phrase. It remains a great but not a companionable poem; the reader is spectator and not protagonist; he must leave behind his own life before he comes to witness this strange conflict of the 'fell incensèd pass of mighty opposites'. *Paradise Lost* imposes a similar limitation on the reader: one may watch the scene, but it is too strange for one to act a part as one may do in *Hamlet*. But Milton, while he shuts the reader out of the narrative, welcomes him into the imagery, where human scenes and incidents caress the imagination with memories of experience. This Morris could not achieve. Further, despite the towering magnificence of the theme, he is still the Earthly Paradise story-teller, content to narrate without assaulting the imagination with phrases that conquer the mind and hold it in bewildered wonder.

In following Morris's Icelandic interests to their culmination one has to leave by the way the dramatic poem, *Love is Enough*, of 1872. It is strange that the possibilities of imitating the medieval morality play have not appealed more widely to modern writers. Morris adapts the form here, employing a somewhat over-conscious artistry that impairs the fresh *naïveté* of the original. He uses five different verse measures to bring

out the various sections of the poem ; one can gain some intricate intellectual pleasure from the result, as one gains pleasure from the intricate pattern of a carpet, but the unerring and commanding effects which make great poetry are absent. Based on a theme in *The Mabinogion*, the central story in *Love is Enough* has a suggestion of *Alastor*, caught into a medieval setting. It recounts the journeyings of Pharamond, a king, who has left his kingdom and his victories for a dream country where he finds Love. He returns at length to his own people, only to find that he has been forgotten, and that his place is occupied by another. Yet he gains satisfaction from the fact that he has loved. Behind this simple outline of human action, Morris has inserted the symbolical figure of Love, and to his teaching the action of the poem seems dedicated. In his early speeches Love seems romantic and sensuous :

Yea, in the heaven from whence my dreams go forth  
 Are stored the signs that make the world of worth :  
 There is the wavering wall of mighty Troy  
 About my Helen's hope and Paris' joy :  
 There lying 'neath the fresh dyed mulberry-tree  
 The sword and cloth of Pyramus I see :  
 There is the number of the joyless days  
 Wherein Medea won no love nor praise :  
 There is the sand my Ariadne pressed ;  
 The footprints of the feet that knew no rest  
 While o'er the sea forth went the fatal sign :  
 The asp of Egypt, the Numidian wine,  
 My Sigurd's sword, my Brynhild's fiery bed,  
 The tale of years of Gudrun's drearihead,  
 And Tristram's glaive, and Iseult's shriek are here,  
 And cloister-gown of joyless Guenevere.

Later in the poem these trappings of romance are laid aside and in their place Love decks himself in the sober garments of social duty and virtuous action :

Have faith, and crave and suffer, and all ye  
 The many mansions of my house shall see  
 In all content : cast shame and pride away,  
 Let honour gild the world's eventless day,  
 Shrink not from change, and shudder not at crime,  
 Leave lies to rattle in the sieve of Time !  
 Then, whatsoe'er your workday gear shall stain,  
 Of me a wedding-garment shall ye gain.

Morris within the poem seems searching for a philosophy of action. He found it on a grander scale in the Icelandic poems, and he applied it as seemed best to him in the socialism which occupied the later years of his life.

The life of action is difficult to combine with consistent creative work. Morris had always been a man of many activities, and yet he found time for poetry. When harassing political propaganda was added to the rest, the poetry began to suffer. The translations of this last period have already been enumerated; they do not add to one's conception of Morris as a poet. Very different is the last volume, *Poems by the Way* (published 1891). Though it may do nothing to increase the sum of his achievement, it illustrates every aspect of his poetic activity. Early lyrics of *The Earthly Paradise* mood are there, including *A Garden by the Sea*, one of the most charming, gentle lyrics in all Morris's work, and one which he had already used in the fourth book of *The Life and Death of Jason* :

I know a little garden-close,  
Set thick with lily and red rose,  
Where I would wander if I might  
From dewy morn to dewy night  
And have one with me wandering.

Icelandic lyrics represent the middle period, including the illuminating personal poem, *Iceland First Seen*, while the later enthusiasms are represented by socialist songs; further, certain lyrics, such as *Error and Loss*, suggest the essential moods of his poetical character, the melancholy and the pathos of 'lost delights' which enter even into the most brightly-coloured of his poems.

The whole of Morris is not in his poetry. His interpretation of life lies largely in his workshops, his reform of domestic decoration, his revival of fine printing, his keen sense of political and social injustice. One might see his importance more fully if one could gather up his various activities into a single conception of his personality. He himself stands between us and that. 'I abominate introspective poetry,' he himself wrote, and apparently his letters were few. Miss May Morris has written to me on this :

I don't think he wrote at great length on all the subjects he had at heart—considering the amount of work he got through in his life, there would not have been time for it. Of course there are interesting letters, but, I think, no sustained correspondence with friends on literary subjects.

He is the bluff, open-hearted, active man, whose states of mind remain unanalysed ; the only way to trace him is to see the mark of his activity on the history of the century.

1. The standard life is by J. W. Mackail, *The Life of William Morris*, 2 vols. (1899) ; critical and biographical material is also to be found in *The Collected Works*, ed. May Morris (1910-1915). The other works on Morris are mainly critical, and derive their biographical sources from Mackail ; *Wm. Morris*, Alfred Noyes (1908), attempts a criticism of Mackail ; *The First Morris*, Dixon Scott, in *Primitiae* (1912), is a spirited study of *The Defence of Guenevere*. *Wm. Morris*, John Drinkwater (1912), is an interesting but somewhat personal appreciation of the poems. *Wm. Morris*, A. Clutton Brock (1915), is an able survey of all aspects of Morris's work and influence. See also *William Morris and his Poetry*, B. I. Evans (1925) ; H. B. Forman, *The Books of W. Morris*, etc. (1897) ; A. Vallance, *W. Morris*, etc. (1897) ; J. B. Glasier, *W. Morris and the Early Days of the Socialist Movement* (1921), and Holbrook Jackson, *W. Morris* (1926) ; Elisabet C. Küster, *Mittelalter und Antike bei William Morris* (Berlin and Leipzig, 1928) ; this last has a full bibliography of critical work on W. Morris.

2. *The Collected Works*, ed. May Morris, vol. viii.
3. *The Record of an Adventurous Life*, H. M. Hyndman (1911).
4. Swinburne, *Essays and Studies* (1875).
5. See *Primitiae* (loc. cit. in 1).
6. *Letters*, ed. Hake and Compton-Rickett (1918).
7. 'Top' is Morris's nickname.
8. *Art and the Beauty of Life*.

## CHAPTER V

MINOR PRE-RAPHAELITE POETS: WILLIAM BELL SCOTT; WILLIAM ALLINGHAM; THOMAS WOOLNER; ARTHUR O'SHAUGHNESSY; JOHN PAYNE; PHILIP BOURKE MARSTON; WILLIAM SHARP (FIONA MACLEOD)

'PRE-RAPHAELITE' is but a lightly fitting formula even when applied to Rossetti, Morris, and Swinburne; still less does it have any close significance when used to discriminate between the work of the minor writers of the period. In this chapter those poets have been gathered together who had some personal or technical allegiance to one of the three major poets, but they have not been cramped to do service to a theory, and their work is described even when it departs from Pre-Raphaelite purposes. Rossetti's personal influence upon his contemporaries emerges: he can fire a sluggish mind to produce better work even though that work may not be a close imitation of his own poetic methods. Yet it must be admitted that the Pre-Raphaelites produced no great successor. The movement was itself in many ways a last phase, romanticism working itself out technically and spiritually, and the minor writers instead of finding new themes and forms are driven to imitation and repetition on patterns already tried. Much of their work, however, is outside the central formulas and in lyric they possess more variety and spontaneity than has generally been allowed.

William Bell Scott<sup>1</sup> (1811-1890), is worth remembering mainly because he was one of Rossetti's close, personal associates. He was the son of Robert Scott, an Edinburgh engraver. Trained as an artist he assisted his father for a number of years. He was writing poetry as early as 1834 and he continued to write till the late eighties. In 1837 he moved to London, buoyed by optimistic hopes of supporting himself by engraving and painting, but the prospect of matrimony and the attraction of a secure income drove him back to the provinces in 1843 as a design master at Newcastle-on-Tyne. Here he remained for

over twenty years and he led a busy life, for apart from professional duties he executed drawings and paintings, acted as a critic of painting and literature, and wrote poetry. In 1859 he formed the most important intimate attachment of his life, a friendship with Miss Alice Boyd of Penkill Castle, Ayrshire : he visited her frequently and, on his introduction, Rossetti was also her guest. In 1870 he settled in London once again, at Chelsea, and gathered around him a considerable literary acquaintance. In his last years he wrote his *Autobiographical Notes*, posthumously published in 1892, valuable not only as a personal record but for the numerous portraits he gives of the Pre-Raphaelite group. His last years, marred by *angina pectoris*, were spent under the care of Alice Boyd at Penkill.

Bell Scott's published works are numerous : he edited Shakespeare, Coleridge, Scott, Keats, and others ; he wrote numerous lives of painters, and histories of art—useful work but of little permanent value. His poetry may one day attract the bibliographer ; it was published now in London, now at a provincial press, and the earlier volumes are difficult to procure. In 1838 appeared *Hades or The Transit*, to which is added an ode on *The Progress of Mind* ; then followed *The Year of the World* (1846), a philosophical poem ; *Poems* (Newcastle and London, 1854) ; *Poems* (London, 1875) ; *A Poet's Harvest Home* (1882) ; and an enlarged edition of the same volume in 1893. The difference in format in these volumes is of interest. *Hades* is a poverty-stricken little volume in grey-brown cloth, and so are some of the earlier volumes ; but *Poems* (1875) is a rich, decorative volume, with etchings by Alma-Tadema and by Bell Scott himself.<sup>2</sup>

The poetry of Bell Scott divides itself into clearly-defined periods. The early work derived from the Spasmodic School has a kinship in ambition with the great things in poetry ; unfortunately it has not an equal kinship in accomplishment. To write on religious and philosophical themes, to make Blake and Shelley one's masters, is also to demand of the gods the gift of genius. *Hades*, a poem in irregular verse reminiscent of Shelley's early poetry, deals with the re-fashioning of the soul in the underworld. It attempts much more than it achieves : the thought is vaporous, and technically it is equally deficient. The same criticism applies to the accompanying

*The Progress of Mind*, an irregular ode, the suggestion of which Scott ascribes to Shelley. The verse exploits irregularity for the development of poetical rhetoric. *The Year of the World* (1846), an even more ambitious piece, gained the praise of Emerson and Rossetti, and apparently of nobody else. Scott has described the purport of the poem in his *Autobiographical Notes*. A dull 'cosmic poem', its scheme and opening books result from the study of Blake, while the last book is due to Scott's absorption of Shelley's combined belief in radicalism and science. Both influences are modified by Scott's own religious beliefs, which were more conventional than those of either of his masters. The poem has little to commend it philosophically, and less poetically. Blank verse is the main medium, and as Bell Scott could have learnt from Shelley, blank verse leaves no room for mediocrity. The poem is a tomb of its own dead verse; the verse of *Orion*, to which it bears some similarity, is immeasurably superior.

After 1846 the religious and philosophical poems ended; the influence of Rossetti came into Bell Scott's poetical work. As a young aspirant, Rossetti had written to Bell Scott an extravagant eulogy of his early poetry; he found such excellence in Bell Scott that he sent the manuscript of *The Blessed Damozel* to be revised by the author of *The Year of the World*. Their acquaintance developed into friendship, and the disciple remained as the master. The influence is seen less clearly in *Poems* (1854) than in *Poems* (1875). The earlier volume is a collection of miscellaneous lyrics, some on philosophical themes, but many showing an interest in ballad, in medievalism, and in mystery, all a direct outcome of Pre-Raphaelite contacts. Among the pieces arising from speculative and religious study is the poem *To the Great Sphinx, Considered as the Symbol of Religious Mystery*. The poem is an imagined summary of the history that has been wrought around the Sphinx:

And yet to whom, O Sphinx !  
 Hast thou not ministered, and dost thou not,  
 If we interpret rightly those blank eyes ?  
 Beside the Isis-gates, the gates of stone,  
 Have blood-red heroes and the sons of gods  
 Uncrowned to thee. Around thy great smooth feet  
 The hands of wandering Homer may have groped  
 In his old blindness. . . .

In *Poems* (1875) Scott collects a number of early pieces and adds many new poems. His preface suggests that the volume contains all of his poetry that he would most wish to preserve. How clearly Rossetti caused a momentary glow in Scott's sluggish poetic spirit can be seen in the ballad *Lady Janet, May Jean*, with which *Poems* (1875) opens :

'Tween sleeping and waking, 'tween fever and fear,  
The lady Janet, May Jean,  
Felt her mothering hour draw near ;  
So wearily dreaming 'tween fever and fear ;  
*The shards have cut the shoeless feet.*

It is true that the poem retains a certain obscurity which Rossetti was the first to observe, but the poetical accomplishment has advanced a long way from the bleak verse of *The Year of the World*. It was in such verses and in a few ballads, such as *Kriemhild's Tryst*, that Scott quickens for a while into poetry, but only a little while. The last volume, *A Poet's Harvest Home*, has the virtue of being simple ; it is a collection of short lyrics which Scott wrote in the early eighties as an old man.

Very little of Scott's verse has the magic and glamour of his Pre-Raphaelite models. His large poetic purposes never gained fruition, and his prose prefaces, with their solemn air of mock modesty, have an atmosphere of the unreal bred from pretension. He sets out his position in poetry in the preface to the 1875 volume : 'No external or adventitious merits, nor even purely intellectual qualities, can altogether determine the value of poetry. It must affect us like music or wine, but it must certainly have wisdom, like an instinct, directing it from within. Every excellent poetic work has a physiognomy of its own, an organic character of its own, the possession or non-possession of which the world will sooner or later sympathetically determine.' By this high tribunal not much of Scott's poetry stands exempt from condemnation. In a few of his lyrics only did he approach excellence, and most of what is good derives from the fructifying contact with Rossetti and the other Pre-Raphaelites.

William Allingham <sup>3</sup> (1824-1889) was mainly independent of



Pre-Raphaelite traditions, but he was a friend of the Pre-Raphaelites. He admired Rossetti; some of Rossetti's best letters were written to him, and it was Rossetti's personality, if not his poetry, that emboldened him into the achievement of creative work. An able minor poet, he is free to a considerable extent from English contemporary influences, though he has his contacts with nineteenth century Irish literature. He knew the great poetic names of his time: Leigh Hunt encouraged him as a young poet; Rossetti, Tennyson, and Browning listened to his opinions with respect; he was allowed to argue with Carlyle and to be the friend of Coventry Patmore. Born at Ballyshannon, Donegal, in 1824, Allingham, after a meagre education, followed his father's occupation of bank official, but later gained a post in the Customs, which he occupied from 1846 to 1870. He paid frequent visits to London, where he was fortunate in his contacts with men of letters. He became a contributor to periodical literature, and in 1870 he retired from the Customs to become sub-editor of *Fraser's Magazine*. In 1874 he succeeded Froude as editor, and continued in this post until 1879. The last decade of his life was spent, first at Witley in Surrey, and later at Hampstead. He died in 1889.

His poems were printed in many different forms, and finally gathered with a fresh arrangement into a collected edition (1889-1893). His first volume was *Poems* (1850), and selections from this, with some new poems, appeared as *Day and Night Songs* (1854). In 1855 a new selection, *The Music Master*, was issued, and a further rearrangement in 1860 appeared as *Day and Night Songs and the Music Master*. In 1860, under the pseudonym 'Giraldus', he issued *Nightingale Valley*, 'a great number of the choicest lyrics and short poems in the English language'; he included six of his own pieces among these 'choicest lyrics'. *Laurence Bloomfield in Ireland*, Allingham's main work, and his only long poem, appeared in 1864 and was frequently reissued. In 1877, in *Songs, Ballads and Stories*, he reprinted many of his poems and added some new ones, so that all his most representative lyrical verse can be found in this volume. In 1883 he published *Evil May-Day*, which Mr. W. B. Yeats has described as 'a heavy argumentative experiment in philosophic poetry', and a drama, *Ashby Manor*,

partly in blank verse, dealing with the Civil War period. In 1884 appeared *Blackberries*, a volume of poetical aphorisms ; and in 1887 *Irish Songs and Poems* ; illustrations, made by Rossetti and Millais for earlier volumes, were re-used in this edition. His wife, Helen Allingham, a water-colour painter of distinction, collected a number of his miscellaneous poems and fragments under the title *By the Way* (1912). Apart from these volumes of verse, Allingham issued a volume of selections, a collection of English ballads (1864), a series of travel sketches, and a collection of miscellaneous essays, *Varieties in Prose* (1893). A number of his fairy poems were also issued separately from time to time.

Of his early pieces, *The Music Master* is a simple story of love and untimely death, told in the manner of Wordsworth's early ballads but with some eighteenth century mannerisms. Similarly, *The Pilot's Song* and *Lady Alice* are simple ballad narratives, well-turned, but adapted to the unsophisticated taste of the *Household Words* audience ; it was his approach to broadside literature and the popular Irish song. He wrote also a few poems for children, fairy pieces of delightful movement and fancy, and here he attains to more individual and imaginative work. Of these lyrics, *The Fairies*, a nursery song, which has been frequently reprinted, is rightly the best known :

Up the airy mountain,  
Down the rushy glen,  
We daren't go a-hunting  
For fear of little men ;  
Wee folk, good folk,  
Trooping all together ;  
Green jacket, red cap,  
And white owl's feather !

This mood of fancy, as airy as Mercutio's Queen Mab speech, he repeats less successfully in lyrics and ballads of Irish suggestion and frequently with themes of magic, as in *The Lupracaun*, and *The Witch-Bride*. He possessed, further, the power of setting down occasionally an impression in its uttermost simplicity and risking the possibilities of the banal. An extreme example is found in a short poem in *Evil May-Day* (1883) :

Four ducks on a pond,  
 A grass-bank beyond,  
 A blue sky of spring,  
 White clouds on the wing ;  
 What a little thing  
 To remember for years—  
 To remember with tears !

If the words seem too simple they are given power, as are the words of many of Allingham's lyrics, when once they are put to music. He attempts the same method in nature lyrics such as *An Evening*, where mere statement set by statement reconstructs the image of a mood :

A sunset's mounded cloud ;  
 A diamond evening-star ;  
 Sad blue hills afar ;  
 Love in his shroud.

Scarcely a tear to shed ;  
 Hardly a word to say ;  
 The end of a summer day ;  
 Sweet Love dead.

The emphasis in such lyrics is upon mournfulness, that grey, autumnal sadness which may be a product of his Irish studies. In certain lyrics he exploits this romantic melancholy for its own sake, and constructs in *Æolian Harp*, *Would I Knew*, and *Therania*, poems where the intangible mood contours are reminiscent of Rossetti and Tennyson. The sombre melody of these lyrics and their twilit atmosphere are Allingham's closest approach to the Pre-Raphaelite manner. It can be seen in the opening stanza of *Æolian Harp* :

What saith the river to the rushes gray,  
 Rushes sadly bending  
 River slowly wending ?  
 Who can tell the whispered things they say ?  
 Youth, and prime, and life, and time,  
 For ever, ever fled away.

Much in Allingham does not live up to the quality of his best work. His *Blackberries*, for instance, are a series of aphoristic verses, frequently missing the perfection which such a form demands. Yet there is ample evidence that he strove

to fashion his experience into adequate poetical form. Referring to *Laurence Bloomfield in Ireland*, he writes in his *Diary*: 'It's not properly compacted as to plan, and never will be now. But with indefinite time at command I should most probably, as so often before, have tried a dozen different shapes and ended by throwing the thing aside.' The hundreds of bright, keen lines collected in *By the Way*, the glittering waste from the workshop of an honest craftsman, show how he revised and rejected in his work.

*Laurence Bloomfield in Ireland* by its length and its accomplishment will remain the most memorable of his poems. The form is the heroic couplet, showing study of Pope, Goldsmith, and Crabbe, a sudden and refreshing example of cool eighteenth century verse amid the more perfervid styles of the late nineteenth century. The theme is a study of contemporary Ireland, seen in the return to his Irish estates of Bloomfield, English-educated, idealistic. The dinner of the wealthy landlords, the portrait of the agent Pigot, the Ribbon Lodge plotters, the evictions, the poor farms and homes of the peasants are all so clearly conveyed that one can credit Turgenev's comment that he had not understood Ireland until he read this volume.<sup>4</sup> The poem was first written for periodical publication in *Fraser's Magazine*, and it lacks a consistent unity of form. In compensation it possesses freshness, and alert couplets give a neat satiric flavour to the description:

Grown sick of London's huge and flimsy maze,  
Polite, luxurious, ineffectual days.

So Allingham begins a description of Bloomfield's mood on his return to Ireland, and he is equally compact in his comment on the landlord, Sir Ulick Harvey:

His judgment feeble and his self-will strong,  
He had his way, and that was mostly wrong.

Allingham comments in his preface on the difficulty of making poetry out of contemporary circumstance. It is a difficulty not to be minimized, yet he contrived to restore to poetry some of those purposes which it possessed in Dryden, of illuminating a modern theme.

Pre-Raphaelite interest, though it enters into some of his

lyrics, does not explain him fully as a poet. His sources of suggestion lay somewhat apart from those of other Irish poets. He caught some of the landscape of Ireland, her dim grey background out of which fairies and magic shapes appear, and most compactly he described her contemporary life. When the best has been isolated from his work he appears as a writer of individuality, who can use poetic methods with economy to attain effects clearly identifiable as his own.

Thomas Woolner<sup>5</sup> (1825-1892) was among the original members of the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood, and his verses, *My Beautiful Lady* and *Of My Lady in Death*, stand as the first contribution in the original number of *The Germ*. Apart from a few short verses in the later numbers of *The Germ* they are the sum of his poetic work at this period. His chief artistic endeavour was to express himself through sculpture, and Bell Scott reports that he once said 'But poetry is not my proper work in this world, I must sculpture it, not write it'. He had been trained from an early age as a painter and sculptor, and only after meeting Rossetti and his associates in 1847 did he turn his attention to literature. In sculpture he was ambitious but not successful at first, and in 1852 he decided to go out to Australia to try his luck in the gold diggings. The mines proved less remunerative than the studio, and in 1854 he was back again in England. From that time his success as a sculptor was continuous; he made medallions of most of his distinguished contemporaries, and this led in time to more ambitious commissions. He gained the friendship of Tennyson and Mrs. Tennyson, and executed a popular bust of Tennyson in 1857. Further, according to Dr. Richard Garnett,<sup>6</sup> it was Woolner who gave to Tennyson the narrative basis for *Enoch Arden* and for *Aylmer's Field*. Poetry came fitfully amid his preoccupations as a sculptor. *My Beautiful Lady*, expanded from *The Germ*, appeared in 1863; *Pygmalion* in 1881; *Silenus* in 1884; *Tiresias* in 1886; *Poems (Nelly Dale and Children)* in 1887. The example of Woolner's work most generally known is neither a sculpture nor a poem, but the delicate vignette which is reprinted as a prefatory illustration to Palgrave's *The Golden Treasury*.

In poetry his vein is a thin one, with almost as little gold

as he himself found in the Australian diggings. ' Poetry is not my proper work ' ; the words were a gesture imitative of Rossetti, but they were the truth. The only poems by Woolner that have a compelling quality are the two lyrics in *The Germ*. Coventry Patmore admired these pieces and they have something of the clear honesty of motive which distinguishes Patmore's *The Angel in the House*. When Woolner published a whole volume entitled *My Beautiful Lady*, the original fragments had been inflated by the addition of blank verse and couplet passages, and heaviness had intruded where lightness was before. Even the fragments themselves have been modified not without mutilation. If *The Angel in the House* was the model for these expansions, it was a model that led Woolner astray. The only moment when fresh poetic quality wakened in Woolner was during the years in the late forties when he first met Rossetti and the other Pre-Raphaelites. It was then that he wrote the fragmentary lyrics on ' My Lady ' which hold within them the sum of his poetic individuality :

I love my lady ; she is very fair ;  
Her brow is white, and bound by simple hair ;  
Her spirit sits aloof, and high,  
Altho' it looks thro' her soft eye  
Sweetly and tenderly.

Through this and other stanzas of *My Beautiful Lady* music may be tenuous, but it has a note which is Woolner's own.

The rest of Woolner's work belongs to a later period and has very different characteristics. The friendship of Tennyson seems to have allured him into classical blank-verse themes. The *Pygmalion*, *Silenus*, and *Tiresias* are mainly in blank verse, but choric interludes are allowed to intrude. Competence without the divine cunning marks them. *Silenus* is more successful than the others, but Woolner is in a tradition and has little of his own to add. The *Poems* (1887) include *Nelly Dale*, a pastoral piece in simple ballad form, and a poem *Children* written on the text of Wordsworth's ' Heaven lies about us in our Infancy '. This last has virtues of observation and thought, and a zest so frequently missing in Woolner's poetry. He shows how with the children

The alchemy of young delight  
Turns everything to gold,

and in doing so suggests that this record of experience is more than mere poetic exercise. When all has been said of Woolner he is a very minor poet. Yet a comparison of *My Beautiful Lady* in the first number of *The Germ* with Woolner's other poems serves to show how Rossetti's personality quickened the imagination of those around him.

Mystery surrounds the life of Arthur William Edgar O'Shaughnessy <sup>7</sup> (1844-1881). He was credited with being a natural son of Lord Lytton, and it was said that he took the maiden name of the Irishwoman who was his mother. His education was private, and at the age of seventeen he was already earning his living as a junior assistant in the library of the British Museum. In 1863 he was appointed to an assistantship in the zoological department. As he knew nothing of natural history, the appointment caused much offence to zoologists, but he worked strenuously and became an authority on certain sections of his subject. His environment, as it is described in Mrs. Moulton's life, does not seem to have been the likeliest for a poet: 'A queer little subterranean cell, strongly scented with spirits of wine, and with grim creatures pickled all round him in rows on rows of gallipots.'

He had friends, principally John Payne, the poet and translator, and J. T. Nettleship, the painter who did the designs for his first volume of poetry, *An Epic of Women*. He found an entry into the literary society, and at Ford Madox Brown's house he met the Rossettis, and Morris, Bell Scott, Swinburne, and Theodore Watts-Dunton. As early as 1869 O'Shaughnessy and Payne contracted a friendship, which influenced their poetical work, with a Mrs. Helen Snee. There was a close attachment between Helen Snee and O'Shaughnessy which seems to have ended in 1873, when he married Eleanor, the daughter of Westland Marston, and sister of Philip Bourke Marston. O'Shaughnessy's poetry is found in four volumes: *An Epic of Women* (1870); *Lays of France* (1872); *Music and Moonlight* (1874); and *Songs of a Worker* (1881), a posthumous publication. He also published with his wife a volume of prose stories for children, *Toyland* (1875). The bulk of his poetical work is found between 1870-1874, the period which marks his friendship with Helen Snee.

*An Epic of Women*, his first volume, which was favourably received, contains two contrasted groups of poems. One is miscellaneous, with an emphasis on sentiment and the ideality of love ; the thought in these poems is thin and desultory, and their movement vaporous. Their quality can be seen in *The Lover* :

But more and more he seemed to seek  
 My heart : till, dreaming of all this,  
 I thought one day to hear him speak,  
 Or feel, indeed, his sudden kiss  
 Bind me to some great unknown bliss :  
 Then there would stay upon my cheek  
 Full many a light and honied stain,  
 That told indeed how I had lain  
 Deep in the flowery banks all day ;  
 And round me too there would remain  
 Some strange wood-blossom's scent away.

The other group gives the volume its strange title. Here the poems are precise and mordant, without any of the vague and intangible qualities of the miscellaneous pieces. The governing mood is one in which passion is portrayed with a cynical emphasis on the faithlessness of woman who awakens it. The opening piece, *Creation*, adapting a motto from Boccaccio, shows woman created from all the most radiant of unearthly elements :

So the beginning of her was this way :  
 Full of sea savours, beautiful and good,  
 Made of sun, sky, and sea—more fair than they—  
 On the green margin of the sea she stood.  
 The coral colour lasted in her veins,  
 Made her lips rosy like a sea-shell's rims ;  
 The purple stained her cheeks with splendid stains,  
 And the pearl's colour clung upon her limbs.

God, according to the legend, having made woman, loved her, and only when He had grown weary did He give her to man, splendid but incomplete :

He feasted her with ease and idle food  
 Of gods, and taught her lusts to fill the whole  
 Of life ; withal He gave her nothing good,  
 And left her as He made her—without soul.



And lo, when He had held her for a season  
 In His own pleasure-palaces above,  
 He gave her unto man ; this is the reason  
 She is so fair to see, so false to love.

The poems which follow exploit the mood of this introductory poem and portray crucial incidents in the lives of famous women, *The Wife of Hephæstus*, *Cleopatra*, and *The Daughter of Herodias*. Decorative, sensuous, and cynical, these studies are the most compact and effective work that O'Shaughnessy achieved. Their quality can be estimated from the opening stanza of the first of the *Cleopatra* poems :

She made a feast for great Marc Antony :  
 Her galley was arrayed in gold and light ;  
 That evening, in the purple sea and sky,  
 It shone green-golden like a chrysolite.

She was reclined upon a Tyrian couch  
 Of crimson wools : out of her loosened vest  
 Set on one shoulder with a serpent brooch  
 Fell one arm white and half her foamy breast.

A French influence is obvious in O'Shaughnessy's first volume. He spoke French fluently, and he knew the poetry of the nineteenth century—Hugo, Leconte de Lisle, Baudelaire, and Gautier. One poem, *Bisclavaret*, which is prefaced with a motto from Marie de France shows an interest in medieval French poetry. In Marie de France the lay tells of the lady whose husband was turned into a were-wolf ; O'Shaughnessy constructs in a dramatic monologue the thoughts of the man-beast. Though an effective poem once the situation has been understood, he has made no effort to reveal the situation by those allusive details which distinguish Browning's monologues.

His second volume, *Lays of France*, is a series of five poems based on five of the *Lais* of Marie de France ; *Laustic*, or *The Lay of the Nightingale* ; *The Lay of the Two Lovers* ; *Chaitivel*, or *The Lay of Love's Unfortunate* ; *The Lay of Eliduc* and *The Lay of Yvenec*. These O'Shaughnessy has rendered in the manner of a medieval romance-writer. He has abandoned the octosyllabic couplets of Marie de France and used an irregular rhyming stanza with an octosyllabic line, suggestive of the

stanzas of the medieval romances. He has inflated the *Lais* to three or four times their original size ; Marie de France's *Laustic* for instance, has one hundred and sixty lines, while the corresponding poem in O'Shaughnessy has over seven hundred and fifty. In the original, brevity and succinctness are the two main charms, and one can find no adequate motive to compensate for O'Shaughnessy's expansion. As an exercise in the imitation of English medieval romances the poems are successful, but the genre seems too tedious to be worthy of imitation. *Laustic* serves to illustrate O'Shaughnessy's method. The *Lai* tells of a lady who left the bed of her lord each night to meet her lover at the window of the bed-chamber. When questioned she said that she went to hear a nightingale, and her lord in anger entrapped and slew the nightingale, and flung it at the lady, and she wrapped it in samite and sent it to her lover. Marie de France has the lines :

En une piece de samit  
A or brusedé e tut escrit,  
A l'oiselet envelopé.

(' In a piece of samite, gold embroidered and inscribed, she wrapped the little bird. ') O'Shaughnessy wrote :

And now to do this she prepared,  
And made soon, fair with many a lace,  
A little wallet tapestried  
Within of stuffs the richest dyed ;  
Full daintily she did enchase  
The outer part ; and worked it all  
With broideries symbolical ;  
And, in the midst, she wrought a place  
For that slain bird ; the body there  
Lay fitly covered up and prest  
Upon warm purples ; in a nest  
It seemed, wings folded smooth and fair,  
And the head sleeping on the breast.

Such a poetic method might have passed before Chaucer, but there seems no valid reason for writing like this after his time.

In 1874 O'Shaughnessy published a further volume of original lyrics, *Music and Moonlight*. Here an indefiniteness of purpose seems to suggest that a halt has been called in his poetical progress. Its vocabulary and stanza, the very gesture of its

speech, are more derivative than in the earlier work. Swinburne is followed on occasions with servility and throughout with excess, as in *The Disease of the Soul* :

My red mouth fashioned for joy,  
 Rich bloom of the world's fairest hour,  
 Is pale with faint kisses that cloy  
 And sadden and wither and sting ;  
 My form, like a blue-veined flower,  
 Has learned to droop and to cower ;  
 And my loves are griefs that destroy  
 The lovers to whom I cling.

All the love poems, even those which are not Swinburnian, have lost the positive and satiric quality found in *An Epic of Women*. The themes are either of idealistic sentiment or of conventional mourning at the loss of the beloved. The most successful is *Song*, a poem which, like many of O'Shaughnessy's other pieces, fails to retain throughout the quality of its opening stanzas :

Has summer come without the rose,  
 Or left the bird behind ?  
 Is the blue changed above thee  
 O world ! or am I blind ?  
 Will you change every flower that grows,  
 Or only change this spot,  
 Where she who said, I love thee,  
 Now says, I love thee not ?

The classical background which O'Shaughnessy used once so freely has been replaced in such poems as *Song of Palms* and *Azure Islands* by a vaguely oriental atmosphere, adapted, perhaps, in deference to the oriental enthusiasms of John Payne. As the first poem in this volume O'Shaughnessy placed the *Qde*, which anthologies were to make the best-known of his poems :

We are the music makers,  
 And we are the dreamers of dreams,  
 Wandering by lone sea-breakers,  
 And sitting by desolate streams ;—  
 World-losers and world-forsakers,  
 On whom the pale moon gleams :  
 Yet we are the movers and shakers  
 Of the world for ever, it seems.

With facile Swinburnian diction, and with a vague complacency of thought, the poem is saved by its pleasing melody. O'Shaughnessy has done better work, but for once he found a theme which he could express definitely and with emphasis. The title poem, *Music and Moonlight*, the longest of O'Shaughnessy's original pieces, attempts, among other things, to present in verse some of the effects of Chopin's music. The defects of O'Shaughnessy's poetry are more marked in this second volume and the positive qualities have declined. He is incapable of loading each rift with ore, and lazy, unmusical, meaningless lines are allowed to come in. He has an excessive desire for decoration and for detail, qualities which lead him away from precision to a vagueness that is occasionally unintelligible. The following stanza from *Song of Palms* incorporates both these defects to such an extent that parody of the rhymes would be difficult :

And its long luxuriant thought  
Lofty palm to palm hath taught,  
While a single vast liana  
All one brotherhood hath wrought,  
Crossing forest and savannah,  
Binding fern and coco-tree,  
Fig-tree, buttress-tree, banana,  
Dwarf cane and tall marití.

O'Shaughnessy's last volume, *Songs of a Worker* (1881), though a posthumous volume, was in the main prepared by him for publication before his death.<sup>8</sup> In part it is occupied with his translations from the French : François Coppée, Paul Verlaine, Ernest D'Hervilly, Sully Prudhomme, Henri Cazalis, Catulle Mendès. The original poems are of unequal strength. Some few of them in the series *Thoughts in Marble* possess the limited excellencies which his poetry can display : they return to the mood of *An Epic of Women* and possess an unusual combination of sensuousness with ironical commentary. The other poems attempt more idealistic themes, though with dubious success. Of these *Christ will Return* is the most substantial ; it possesses a moral strenuousness absent in much of O'Shaughnessy's verse, though its poetical quality does not transcend that of effective rhetoric. The poem *Colibri*, with its flamboyant South American setting, shows how decorative

elements baffle and betray a narrative theme in O'Shaughnessy's later work.

His weaknesses are palpable: they include an inability to maintain an even quality of verse in a single lyric, a vagueness in thought, an excess in decoration. The later work suffers in being blatantly derivative, and in adapting the pessimism of the greater Pre-Raphaelites and diluting it to a persistent languorousness. In some few poems a more independent mood emerges, and it is that mood which gives O'Shaughnessy his place as a minor poet at the close of the century.

John Payne <sup>9</sup> (1842-1916), O'Shaughnessy's companion in poetry, was the son of a prosperous family fallen on less happy days, and in early life he pursued a variety of occupations. He showed early an aptitude for languages, and he acquired, mainly by private study, an acquaintance not only with a number of European tongues but also with Turkish, Persian, and Arabic. In London, as a solicitor's clerk, in 1861, he was encouraged by reading Emerson to attempt original work, and a friendship with O'Shaughnessy and an acquaintance with the Pre-Raphaelite poets led him into literary circles. His first volume, *The Masque of Shadows*, was published in 1870; it was followed by a volume of sonnets, *Intaglios* (1871),<sup>10</sup> and in 1872 by *Songs of Life and Death*. These volumes mark the close of Payne's first period as a poet. In the years which follow he devoted himself to translation, both in verse and prose. His range was remarkable, and the authors and works which he rendered include Villon, *The Arabian Nights*, Boccaccio, Bandello, Omar Khayyám, Hafiz, and Heine. Amid these preoccupations he produced a new poem, *Lautrec*, in 1878, and *New Poems* in 1880. Later he returned again from translated to original work and issued a series of volumes: *Collected Poems* (1902), *Vigil and Vision* (1903), *Songs of Consolation* (1904), *Carol and Cadence* (1908), *Flower o' the Thorn* (1909), *The Way of the Winepress* (posthumous publication, 1920). He died in 1916.

Payne has suffered from extravagant contemporary praise, and subsequent complete neglect, apart from the over-zealous partisanship of a few adherents. He would appear to have been a crotchety person, a mixture of considerable talents,

little whims, and some venom, who flourished in the atmosphere of a coterie. Unfortunately, he believed that his age was against him, and the mood of his later poetry is sometimes marred by embittered disillusionment.

His original poetry seems puny when compared with his translated work. He is attracted by the same themes as O'Shaughnessy and has the same unevenness in accomplishment. He is susceptible to Pre-Raphaelite influences, but their significance diminishes in his verses. One can distinguish a number of prevailing themes : medieval stories and ballads of which *The Rhyme of Redemption*, *Sir Floris*, *Sir Winfrith* are the main examples ; sonnets of sentiment and of philosophy with a prevailing emphasis on death ; and dream poems or fantasies, such as *The Masque of the Shadows*. His most successful work is his simplest, his ballad and verse narratives. Here his work is a direct continuation of the Pre-Raphaelite interest, though his ballads are more frankly medieval than the novel and sophisticated poems evolved out of the form by Rossetti. *Sir Floris*, a Graal story, is the most successful example of his achievement in this form. Told in the manner of a medieval romance, without any further motive than the imitation of a medieval form, its success within its limited range is adequate. The romance stanza transmutes metrical deficiencies into quaintness, though the result is that the poet makes things too easy for himself. In *The Rhyme of Redemption* he attempts the ballad stanza, only to find that it is more strenuous and exacting than the long rhyming stanza of the romances, and he adds to his difficulties by enslaving himself with internal rhymes. Of the shorter poems in this group *The Ballad of Shameful Death* is the most memorable, and is one of the outstanding poems in Payne's work. The thought of the piece is summarized in the lines from Baudelaire which form a motto to the poem :

Le regard calme et haut,  
Qui damne tout un peuple autour d'un échafaud.

The motive is elaborated by the narrative in the poem :

I go in the felons' cart, with my hands bound fast with the cord,  
And nothing of brave or bright in the death I ride toward :  
The people clamour and jeer with a fierce and an evil glee,  
And the mothers and maids that pass do shudder to look on me.

All this work shows a marked influence of William Morris, found less in theme, though Payne does retell the Rapunzel story in *Sir Winfrith*, than in the general method and conception. On more than one occasion he re-echoes the sentiment of the introductory verses to *The Earthly Paradise*, in which Morris refers to himself as 'An idle singer of an empty day':

Ah! who shall cure the sickness of the time?  
 Who shall bring healing to the wounded age?  
 Not I, forsooth. I—with my idle rhyme—  
 Right gladly would I blazon all the page  
 Of life with flowers, and, with the happy chime  
 Of heart-free songs, lift up the folk to climb  
 The peaks that soar out of the tempest's rage.

Similarly, in his prefatory poem to *The Masque of Shadows*:

This is the House of Dreams. Whoso is fain  
 To enter in this shadow-land of mine  
 He must forget the utter Summer's shine  
 And all the daylight ways of hand and brain.

Ballad and romance, though the most successful element in his poetry, form but a small portion of the whole. With the volume of sonnets *Intaglios* (1872) Payne began a career as a sonnet writer which he maintained to the end. The dominating element is sentiment, but criticism and the praise of poets and friends are also among his purposes. He was a talented versifier in his sonnets, clear in his detail, competent in diction, but without much to express. The following sonnet from *Intaglios* gives a conception of his skill, and shows equally the decorative elements which both he and O'Shaughnessy derived from Rossetti:

A place of woven flowers and singing winds,  
 Jewell'd with moss and plumed with nodding ferns;  
 A hall of silver silence, wherein burns  
 A soft star-glamour. Through the moss that binds  
 Fern-roots with gold, a slow clear water winds,  
 And slackens into tiny pools of light,  
 Pale topaz, amethyst and chrysolite,  
 Set in the gilded tracery of the grass:  
 And there the charmed hours do lingering pass  
 Unwilling to forsake so fair a place.  
 In such a haunt I picture thee by day,

Stirring the air to rapture with the grace  
Of thy sweet songs, and wonder of thy face  
Until the slow West gloom to purple-grey.

The sonnets as a whole miss all urgency of expression ; their detail and decoration arise and flourish but their imaginative purpose is only dimly conceived.

The final element in Payne, more particularly in his later poetry, is of dream mingled with philosophy. Unfortunately it is a mood accompanied by a decrease of intelligibility. He overstrained his talents, restless in attempting to accomplish more than was within him to achieve. His poetry where it is most effective is within the Pre-Raphaelite tradition, but unfortunately the minor followers of Pre-Raphaelitism had little new to add. His work as a translator was a tribute to his linguistic rather than his poetic skill. He prided himself on exactness, but it was verbal and syntactical, seldom incorporating the inner spirit of his original. His most definite contribution lies in his Persian and Arabic studies, where he worked an independent field with industrious sincerity.

The life of Philip Bourke Marston <sup>11</sup> (1850-1887) is the keenest legend of misfortune in the literary history of the century. The fates had seemed favourable. He was the son of John Westland Marston (1819-1890), the writer of historical and poetic drama, who, if he could not offer his son a competence, could give him the companionship of the main literary figures of the day. But disaster after disaster follows in his life. At the age of three, through a series of accidents, he lost his sight : partially at first, and then completely. Despite this calamity he contrived, largely through the help of his mother, to educate himself to literature. In 1870 his mother died. As a young man he became betrothed to Mary Nesbit ; she died in 1871. In 1874 Oliver Madox Brown, his best friend, died suddenly. His sister Cicely died in 1878, and in 1879 his remaining sister, Eleanor, the wife of O'Shaughnessy the poet. With this melancholy roll-call of death recurring with such persistence in his life, we are prepared for the sadness of his poetry. His published work is found in three volumes : *Song-Tide* (1871) ; *All in All* (1875) ; *Wind-Voices* (1883). <sup>12</sup> In 1891 a posthumous volume, *A Last Harvest*, was issued by Louise



Chandler Moulton, an American lady of letters who was a friend of many English poets of the period, and in 1892 she also issued his *Collected Poems*, including some additional material. Bourke Marston had a far wider recognition in America than in England, and during his later years he was dependent for an income largely upon American editors and publishers.

His poetry raises problems that are psychological as well as literary. What images from the world of experience can penetrate to a mind that saw dimly for a few years and then not at all? For Marston, sounds and depths and odours are more impressive than shapes and colours; the images of the sea and tides, and clouds, and, in kindlier moments, the qualities of flowers are the resources of his poetry. Above all, the varied qualities of sound suggest to his mind the imagery which normal men gain from visual sensation. *Song-Tide* contains a sonnet, *Speechless, Upon the Marriage of two Deaf and Dumb Persons*, which might be passed over as an exercise in the grotesque did it not suggest Marston's unusual consciousness of how each of the senses contributes to life. His infirmities led him here to a pathological study, but a kindlier mood dwells in most of his poems.

His main medium was the sonnet, with love as its theme, and intricate patterns of mood and phrase as its texture. Rossetti is the main influence, though Marston does not attempt any imitation of the colour and sensuous glamour of *The House of Life*, nor has he Rossetti's rare skill in intangible images, clearly seen but in dim light. Yet the general attitude to love, the emphasis on its supreme importance, and much of the poetical vocabulary, are directly inherited from Rossetti. The influence of Swinburne, who knew Marston and admired his verse, is present though less obviously and persistently. Further, he has derived, partly from the Pre-Raphaelites and partly from the circumstances of his own life, that mood of spiritual nostalgia which finds no rest on earth nor hope in the life beyond the earth. In *Song-Tide* he attempts to track 'through its dark and devious windings a heart which, loving passionately and with reason, had, for all, no hope of ever meeting with the response for which it yearned'. In *All in All* he attempts to continue this analysis of love, now showing

' how the love, so longed for and despaired of, is at last vouchsafed with all attendant peace and blessedness, until the beloved one is withdrawn, and the mourner is left but a memory '. This second series, which possesses a most consistent mournfulness, is written with the memory of Mary Nesbit in his mind. The love theme expressed in sonnet form is less conspicuous in the final volume, *Wind-Voices*, and such poems as deal with it seem to suggest a happier mood, made buoyant by the thought of some final spiritual reunion. Marston wrote the sonnet in a variety of forms ; he had mastered the medium though he allows himself, as does Rossetti, considerable licence in rhyme. His verse has a certain inevitable monotony ; images of troubled black waters pursue us and mock at us through his poems. The strange thing remains that, shut off from visual sensation, he could express so much. The crisis of the following poem, one in which Pre-Raphaelite imitation is most marked, is made dependent on an act of sight, ' lifting up my eyes, I looked ' ; and yet the poem is maintained with an almost complete independence of visual imagery :

In places that have known my lady's grace,  
Seeing how all my soul and life lay there,  
I sat ; when lo, so sitting, I was 'ware  
Of breath that fell in sighs upon my face,  
While like a harp, where through the night-wind plays  
A sorrowful, delicious, nameless air,  
A voice wherein I felt my soul had share  
Made music in the consecrated place.

Then, lifting up my eyes, I looked, and lo !  
A fair sad woman sitting all alone  
Where Love brief while ago had made his throne :  
Against her pale still breast I leant my brow,  
' Thy name,' I said, ' is Grief ; take then my vow  
That I and thou henceforward be as one.'

Marston had individual lyrics in his work which surpass in quality any single sonnet from the love sequences. They are mainly poems of flowers, where the source of suggestion lies with the senses of sound and smell. The best of these occurs in the first volume, and is entitled *The Rose and the Wind* : a poem of fancy, of the passionate destruction of flower by wind. The poems gain quality deeper than that of fancy by an

unemphatic gesture of allegory. The conversations of flowers and trees are freshly and delicately described :

THE BEECH

Your lover comes, be happy now, O Rose !  
He softly through my bending branches goes.  
Soon he shall come, and you shall feel his kiss.

THE ROSE

Already my flushed heart grows faint with bliss ;  
Love, I have longed for you through all the night.

THE WIND

And I to kiss your petals warm and bright.

There are a number of other nature studies in the first two volumes, poems fresh in mood and method, portraying Marston's mind more detached from contemporary literary influences than in the love poetry. A few lyrics, such as *A Dream*, which Swinburne praised, elaborate the mood of the sonnets.

It is in the final volume, *Wind-Voices*, and in the posthumous *A Last Harvest*, that Marston seems to have experimented most freely outside the sonnet form, and as a welcome accompaniment there is more variety of mood than in the earlier volumes : *The Old Churchyard of Bonchurch*, a poem with Swinburnian reminiscence ; *The Ballad of Monk Julius*, one of a number of simple narrative pieces ; and the whole of *New Garden Secrets*, a continuation of earlier nature moods, suggest that Marston was maturing as a poet when he died in 1887 at the age of thirty-seven.

William Sharp (Fiona Macleod) <sup>13</sup> (1855-1905), was born at Paisley. Despite his desires to go to sea or to escape to the gipsies, his parents contrived to give him a regular education, including a period at Glasgow University. After a sailing voyage to Australia, taken to ward off consumptive tendencies, he obtained a clerkship in London and began to devote himself to literature. In 1881 he had the good-fortune to meet D. G. Rossetti, who introduced him to men of letters. The rest of the life is marked by prolific production both in verse and prose. Immediately on Rossetti's death he wrote his biography (1882). This he followed with many other studies, including *Heine* (1888) and *Browning* (1890) ; he edited *The Canterbury*

*Poets* and produced numerous essays, critical works, novels, and short stories. Amid this varied activity he found time to write verse. His early work written under his own name included *The Human Inheritance* (1882), *Earth's Voices* (1884), and *Romantic Ballads and Poems of Phantasy* (1888), and some rhymeless verses, *Sospiri di Roma* (1891). Meanwhile Sharp had met in Rome a lady who seemed to carry within her memories of the heroic past of Greece and of the North. She stimulated him to convert these memories, particularly in their Gaelic features, into literary forms. Sharp seems to have alleged that when he wrote under the influence of this friend he was a second personality, and this other self he named Fiona Macleod. From 1890 he maintained a dual personality. Though writing still as William Sharp, he also produced under the name of Fiona Macleod works both in verse and prose, beginning in 1894 with a prose romance, *Pharais*. In verse the earliest volume was *From the Hills of Dream* (1897); two dramas, *The House of Usna* (mainly in prose) (1900), and *The Immortal Hour* (1900); other poems and prose rhythms were issued, and a posthumous collection appeared finally (1909-1910).

Sharp's early verse in *The Human Inheritance* shows poetic ambition combined with unequal powers of accomplishment, and so it remained throughout his work. The title poem is a dim, visionary account of man's development, reminiscent of the early work of Bell Scott. Sharp creates an atmosphere of diffused dreaminess which allows a loose poetical texture:

Below, the wide waste of the ocean lay,  
League upon league of moonled waters, spray  
And foam and salt sea-sand: a world of sea  
By strong winds buffeted.

Much more concrete and effective is *Motherhood*, the first part of which, describing the birth-throes of a tigress, is Sharp's most decisive poetical composition. He uses a Pre-Raphaelite detail for purposes of which the Pre-Raphaelites would not have approved. The detail, reminiscent at times of O'Shaughnessy, has gained from Sharp's own voyagings, and the grimness of the motive makes vivid contrast with his usual themes:

Deep 'mid the rice-field's green-hued gloom  
A tigress lay with birth-throes ta'en;

Her swaying tail swept o'er her womb  
 As if to sweep away the pain  
 That clutched her by the gold-barred thighs  
 And shook her throat with snarling cries.

Her white teeth tore the wild-rice stems ;  
 And as she moaned her green eyes grew  
 Lurid like shining baleful gems  
 With fires volcanic lighten'd through,  
 While froth fell from her churning jaws  
 Upon her skin-drawn gleaming claws.

Much of *Earth's Voices* he devoted to pastel studies of Nature, where the effect is usually marred by the diffuseness of the verse. In *Sospitira*, the outstanding poem in this volume, he returned to the metre of *Motherhood*, and to a narrative borrowed from Ouida. The poem has clarity, but it is infected with luxuriant and unnecessary epithets. As in the earlier volume he introduced a fresh, Australian background into a number of the poems. The *Romantic Ballads* (1888) were Sharp's attempt to free the ballad from the 'literary' qualities which Rossetti had fastened to it. His performance is unequal. In *The Son of Allan* he remains Rossetti's disciple in movement and refrain, while *The Weird of Michael Scott* gains simplicity only by a thinness in thought matched to a glib facility of movement. In 1890 *Sospiri di Roma* shows how Sharp's tendencies towards tenuity of thought were encouraged by irregular and rhymeless verse. Such patterns leave all the responsibility for control with the poet, and Sharp is unable to restrain the dreamy rhetoric which rose so easily within his mind.

Despite all discussions on dual personality and psychic memory, the 'Fiona' poems are, both in theme and vocabulary, merely Sharp's fuller exploitation of romantic inclinations apparent in his earlier work. These, it has been suggested, were strengthened by memories of stories told by his old Highland nurse, and they certainly gained further definition by the reading he had done in preparing his edition of Ossian (1896). Nor was 'Fiona' as a poet, particularly as a dramatic poet, without the help and encouragement of Mr. W. B. Yeats. The resulting verse suffered from diffuseness, but its dim, twilight colouring resuscitated the interest of earlier romanticism in ruins, legends, and far-off forgotten things, seen through

a mist of vague but not unpleasant Ossianic rhetoric. The following, which is the opening passage from *The Immortal Hour*, shows how mechanical is Sharp's use of the adjective which suggests atmosphere, and how loose is the texture of the verse :

By dim moon-glimmering coasts and dim grey wastes  
Of thistle-gathered shingle, and sea-murmuring woods  
Trode once but now untrod . . . under grey skies  
That had the grey wave sighing in their sails  
And in their drooping sails the grey sea-ebb,  
And with the grey wind wailing evermore  
Blowing the dun leaf from the blackening trees,  
I have travelled from one darkness to another.

He seems like a gleaner going through all the places where romantic poetry has been harvested and gathering what is left into his verses. *The Immortal Hour* had the good fortune to attract Mr. Rutland Boughton as a possible libretto for his music, and as a result it has had a successful stage history. There is nothing in this play or in *The House of Usna* to suggest that they would have sufficient strength in themselves to survive as dramas.

The legend of Fiona Macleod gave the poetry of William Sharp a temporary popularity disproportionate to its merit. He never realized the distinction, essential in art, between the reception of experiences or emotions and their successful portrayal in an adequate medium. He is frequently content, as in *Dreams within Dreams*, to make a rhetorical statement and feel that his duty as a poet is at an end :

I have gone out and seen the lands of Faery,  
And have found sorrow and peace and beauty there,  
And have not known one from the other, but found each  
Lovely and gracious alike, delicate and fair.

If this be poetry, then any one who has stated that some experience has moved him deeply is a poet. Similarly, he relies on a small cohort of romantically coloured adjectives and nouns which he sends into his poems : ' dim ' and ' grey ' occur profusely, while the ' flittermice ' that steal in and out of the poems both of William Sharp and Fiona Macleod serve as liaison officers between the dual personality. He had a poetic

quality which appeared most clearly when his verbal fluency could be restrained. It can be found in his early poems, and recurs, less consistently, in some of the short-line lyrics of the Fiona Macleod period, as in *The Vision* :

In a fair place  
Of whin and grass,  
I heard feet pass  
Where no one was.

I saw a face  
Bloom like a flower—  
Nay, as the rain-bow shower  
Of a tempestuous hour.

It was not man, nor woman :  
It was not human :  
But beautiful and wild  
Terribly undefiled,  
I knew an unborn child.

Encouraged at one period by Rossetti and at another by Mr. W. B. Yeats, he had little of that passionate attachment to the craftsmanship of verse which marked their work, but he possessed a facile habit for re-fashioning the material from which romantic poetry is made.

1. The main biographical source is *Autobiographical Notes*, edited W. Minto, 2 vols. (1892) ; this is supplemented by additional information in *The Dictionary of National Biography* ; there are frequent references to Scott in the memoirs of D. G. Rossetti by W. M. Rossetti (see p. 25).

2. A copy of this volume was the first work ever tooled by Cobden-Sanderson, a beautiful volume in gold-tooled morocco, now in the British Museum.

3. *W. Allingham, A Diary*, ed. H. Allingham and D. Radford (1907) ; *Letters to W. Allingham* (1911) ; *Letters from W. Allingham to E. B. Browning* (1914). A. H. Miles's, *The Poets and Poetry of the Century* (1892), has an essay on him by W. B. Yeats ; there is biographical material in Allingham's prose work, e.g. *Rambles in England and Ireland*, Patricius Walker (pseud. for W. A.) (1873). See also *William Allingham und seine Dichtung*, Hans Kropf (Bern, 1928), which deals with Allingham and Ireland ; and A. P. Graves in *Transactions of the Royal Society of Literature*, 2nd series, vol. XXXII, part III.

4. Quoted in *The Dictionary of National Biography*.

5. See *Memories*, Amy Woolner (1917), largely a collection of letters between Woolner and his numerous correspondents.

6. *The Dictionary of National Biography*.
7. Apart from Dr. Richard Garnett's discreet notice in *The Dictionary of National Biography*, and a brief life by Louise Chandler Moulton (1894), there is no biographical material.
8. In the preface, A. W. Newport Deacon refers to 'the mass of unpublished manuscript found amongst his literary remains'.
9. *The Life of John Payne*, Thomas Wright (1919).
10. Written before *The Masque of Shadows*.
11. A biographical sketch by Louise Chandler Moulton in *A Last Harvest* (1891), and by the same author in *Collected Poems* (1892); P. B. Marston, C. C. Osborne (1926).
12. Other volumes were issued in the United States.
13. *William Sharp*, Elizabeth A. Sharp (1910, enlarged 1912).



## CHAPTER VI

COVENTRY PATMORE AND ALLIED POETS : COVENTRY PATMORE ; FRANCIS THOMPSON ; MRS. ALICE MEYNELL

THE Pre-Raphaelites developed and exploited a fresh element in English romanticism. Yet the boundaries of their poetical world excluded many themes. Their philosophy had been in the main an aestheticism preoccupied with the exclusion from poetry of mystical or religious experience. Rossetti's contacts with Catholic ritual were wayward and unconvincing ; Swinburne's efforts towards philosophical poetry in *Songs before Sunrise* were awkwardly self-conscious ; while William Morris had kept all such themes rigorously away from his work. Contemporary with them there existed, however, more than one group of poets who, influenced by the Oxford Movement, gave expression to religious faith or mystical experience which had contact with some section of the Christian Church. Their work, represented in Pre-Raphaelite verse mainly by Christina Rossetti, is one of the most marked features of later nineteenth century poetry. It is not that they deal solely with religious themes, but their main poetic motives arise from the consciousness of some religious faith. Nor can they be placed all in one group as if they formed a single movement. They appear partly from their work, and still more from their personal contacts, to centre around two figures. Coventry Patmore is definitely one leader, and in close personal contact with him are Francis Thompson and Mrs. Alice Meynell. The second group is of a much more heterogeneous nature. Its dominating figure is Robert Bridges, and it includes the poets with whom he had contact and whose work he championed. He had himself felt that the Pre-Raphaelites, particularly Morris, had mutilated their medievalism by the exclusion of religion. He was led, therefore, to champion Canon Dixon, an associate of the Morris group who had remained faithful to his early beliefs. Similarly, he praised Mary Coleridge, and, further, he was the first interpreter of Gerard Manley Hopkins, the most original religious poet of the period, whose verse had had such a marked

influence on Bridges's own work. These divisions of the religious poets and mystical poets into two groups are not close or exclusive: Hopkins, for instance, had poetical contacts with Patmore, and was affected by Walter Pater, the philosopher of aestheticism. In the main, however, the associations of Patmore and of Bridges serve to group the important development of religious and philosophical verse in the later nineteenth century.

Coventry Kersey Dighton Patmore<sup>1</sup> (1823-1896) was the son of Peter Patmore, a journalist of the romantic period and an associate of Hazlitt and Lamb. His was not a fortunate father to possess. He was reputed to have played a dishonourable part in a literary duel; he had absconded from his creditors, and in the crucial years of his son's early poetical career he had published a volume of lively but controversial *Recollections* (1854). His kindest feature was his affection for his son, and the son was loyal to the father. Patmore's early life up to 1845 is one of freedom for education, and the exercise of literature without financial embarrassment. In 1845 his father fled from his creditors, and Patmore was left to his own resources. A period of hackwork and penury followed, which was relieved when Monckton Milnes (Lord Houghton) nominated him to an appointment in the printed books department of the British Museum (1846); 1846-1862 was the period of his graduation as a poet, and it synchronizes with his friendship with Tennyson, who had such a strong influence over him. In 1847 he married Emily Andrews, and in 1854 he began publication of *The Angel in the House*, a poem intimately associated with her personality and his love of her. Patmore and his wife diverged widely in religious belief; it was not an open conflict, for Patmore seems to have restrained his High Church proclivities in deference to her merciless Puritanism. In 1862 Emily Patmore died. It was a crisis in Patmore's development. *The Angel in the House*, though continued, was developed in a new way and never rightly completed. In 1864 Patmore adopted the Roman Catholic faith, and married a Catholic, Caroline Byles, who had been an intimate friend of Cardinal Manning. Miss Byles had a considerable fortune, and in 1865 Patmore gave up his position in the Museum and retired to Heron's Ghyll in Sussex. Here he developed the estate with

practical efficiency, as he has described in *How I managed and improved my Estate*. Later he settled in Hastings. His literary product during this new period is represented mainly by the Odes which centre in the various editions of *The Unknown Eros*. He engaged also in prose literary criticism and in journalism. His prose work includes literary essays (*Principle in Art*) (1889) and a number of religious meditations. In 1880 his second wife died, and in 1881 he married Miss Harriet Robson. He died at Lymington in 1896.

Patmore's revisions to his published work led to so many reissues that a number of bibliographical difficulties arise. The main editions have been listed in an appendix.<sup>2</sup> *Poems* (1844) was the earliest volume, and it was followed by *Tamerton Church-Tower and Other Poems* (1853). These two volumes form his early work. The middle period is filled by *The Angel in the House* and its associated poems. The first portion was issued in 1854 and the poem approached its final form in 1863. In 1878 *Amelia* was published with a number of early poems and a long prefatory study of English metrical law; 1877 saw the first edition of *The Unknown Eros*, which was enlarged until it reached its final form in 1890.

*Poems* (1844) consists of four narratives told in lyrical measures. *The River* is a story of bride and bridegroom and of the lover who kills himself in failing to gain a love that he has not expressed. *The Woodman's Daughter* is a ballad theme of love of high degree for the lowly maiden and its tragic consequence in child murder and madness. *Lilian* is the monologue of a worthy lover rejected for a rival of lighter charm and less substantial worth. *Sir Hubert* is the story of the Falcon from Boccaccio's *Decamerone* (fifth day, novel nine). The interest lies not so much with the stories themselves as with the tentative approach of a young writer to his medium. Widely differing influences have been suggested, and yet the main poetical inheritance seems openly revealed. Most definitely impressed is the bewitching melody of Coleridge. In *The River* he uses a stanza reminiscent of Tennyson's *Sir Galahad*, and mingles into it memories derived from *The Ancient Mariner* :

The guests are gay ; the minstrels play ;  
The hall is liker noon than night ;

From side to side they toast the Bride,  
 Who blusheth ruby light ;  
 For youth and age, for clown and sage,  
 It is a cheerful sight !

The influence of Wordsworth is less frequent but not less distinct. The Wordsworth of *Lyrical Ballads* modified by memories of Tennyson's English idylls intrudes clearly into such stanzas as the following from the opening of *The Woodman's Daughter* :

In ' Gerald's Cottage ', on the hill,  
 Old Gerald, and his child—  
 His daughter, Maud—dwelt happily—  
 He worked, and she beguiled  
 The long day at her spinning-wheel,  
 In the garden, now grown wild.

Allied to these precise influences on diction one discovers that all the poems, except *Lilian*, have varieties of ballad form and a suggestion of medieval setting. *Lilian* stands apart, and it is from this poem that the mood of *The Angel in the House* derives its genesis. The subject is contemporary, and both form and theme have been strongly influenced by Tennyson's *Locksley Hall*. It is with rejection of romantic influence for that of Tennyson and the substitution of contemporary for medieval themes that Patmore's poetry is to find its development. The poetry throughout this volume is tentative, with some weak, flat lines, ' hammered up out of old nail-ends ', as Tennyson said. Further, an unconscious bathos sometimes intrudes, as if one were in the presence of a humourless mind : so in *Lilian* the rival lover is described, with ' lips, still most expressive, though deform'd with quoting French '. Shining through the deficiencies are moments of observation and feeling keenly expressed, suggesting that a new poet is working his way through. Unfortunately, apart from a kindly letter from Bulwer Lytton, Patmore gained little encouragement from the publication of this first volume. *Blackwood's* were still scenting out any suggestion of romanticism in English poetry, and their comment on Patmore may be quoted here to show what virulence Review criticism could still employ in 1844 : ' Indeed we question whether the strains of any

poetaster can be considered vile when brought into comparison with this gentleman's verses. . . . This is the life into which the slime of the Keatses and Shelleys of former times has fecundated.'

If the first volume suffered from contact with romanticism, the second, *Tamerton Church-Tower*, had to endure confusion with the work of Peter Patmore, the father, whose *Recollections* appeared in 1854. Even in places where the work of father and son was not confused, the memory of the father told against the rising reputation of the son. The volume consists of a republication of the earlier pieces in revised form, and of new poems. The new poems show that Patmore has released himself from the romantics, except for memories of Wordsworth, and that he retains independence from the new melodies of Browning, Arnold, and Rossetti. To Tennyson alone he owes kinship, particularly to the Tennyson of the English idylls. The title-poem has an original theme developed in simple ballad form. Three separate incidents are recorded: first, the poet and his friend ride out from Tamerton and discuss the ladies whom they are to wed; secondly, the friends now wedded are in a boat off the Cornish coast, and Blanche, the poet's wife, is drowned in a storm; thirdly, the poet himself rides by Tamerton and thinks of life and of his personal experience in life. The reconciliation to life with which the poem closes reaffirms the influence of Wordsworth, particularly in the scene when the poet riding from Tamerton is overtaken by a girl, an alms-taught scholar who sings:

' Saint Stephen, stoned, nor griev'd nor groan'd  
     'Twas all for his good gain;  
 For Christ him blest, till he confess'd  
     A sweet content in pain.

Then Christ His cross is no way loss,  
     But even a present boon:  
 Of His dear blood fair shines a flood  
     On heaven's eternal noon.'

While the interpretation of human emotion through the memory of natural scenery recalls Wordsworth, the contemporary scene and the simple, unadorned verse is a continuance of the poetic purposes initiated in *Lilian*. Still, the final effect

is inconclusive, a division between the effect desired and the effect produced.<sup>3</sup>

A number of the new poems in this volume are of interest, but two, *Ladies' Praise* and *Love's Apology*, suggest the road down which Patmore is to travel. These were adapted later as parts of *The Angel in the House*, and in them Patmore finds, for the first time, the content and mood of the poetry of his middle period. Love is the theme, a love not dominated by the sensuous or enclosed by morality. For Patmore's conception of love arises in the sacramental and finds its expression in a mystical adoration :

She is  
' Our most effectual means of grace  
And casket of our worldly bliss.'

Discovering this individual approach to poetry and to experience, Patmore developed it in *The Angel in the House*. He was conscious of an original and difficult purpose. Other poets had emphasized the erotic, the sensuous, and the lewd aspects of love, and all these had some element of excitement possessing immediate if superficial attraction. For him the love in marriage of man and woman, nuptial love, should be the theme, and he would show that it transcended other themes, for here was the root

Of all our love to man and God.

Further, the scene should be contemporary and the setting realistic. Patmore knew the dangers of the too-familiar theme, but he regarded its successful presentation as part of his task : the spirit of Dante was to be expressed in the setting of the Trollope novels. Similarly, he made simplicity the main feature of his verse form, the octosyllabic quatrain with alternate rhymes, and to those who found it 'easy reading' he replied that it was 'often damned hard writing'. Both versification and diction are again influenced by Tennyson and are derived from *The Day Dream*, *The Miller's Daughter* and other poems of that order. It has no 'fatal facility', but it tends to dullness, and this Patmore triumphantly overcomes. His success is due, however, to a very close study of Tennyson's

use of the form and possibly to his knowledge of Crabbe's use of the stanza.

The setting and theme must be recounted if Patmore's achievement is to be estimated. To elude the dangerous suggestion that the poem is autobiographical, he imagines a poet, Vaughan, writing to his wife on the eighth anniversary of their wedding a poem in which he recounts his love and his wooing of her. This device Patmore employs in Books I and II, and his manipulation of it is more elaborate than is frequently allowed. Each book, apart from introductory and concluding poems, is divided into cantos, containing a number of separate but related poems. The earlier pieces are reflective poems, mainly abstract in vocabulary and philosophical in approach. These are followed by neat, realistic narrative poems, portraying incidents in which the development of love is described. It was against these quiet recitals of apparently ordinary circumstance that the main critical attack was directed. But this placid background was essential to the development of Patmore's philosophy. He recounts how Dean Churchill had three daughters. When Felix Vaughan returned from abroad he discovered that of these he loved Honoria, and he was pleased to find that in his absence she had not been captured by his naval cousin Frederick Graham. The incidents which follow are trivial to the rational onlooker but momentous to the lover: an invitation to dine; a gift of violets from Honoria; a formal talk with the Dean; a visit to church; a dance; and so to the engagement with which the first book closes:

Her soul, which late I loved to invest  
With pity for my poor desert,  
Buried its face within my breast,  
Like a pet fawn by hunters hurt.

The actual incidents in *The Espousals* are still more difficult to control. The prattle of relations, and the good-nights of the lovers,

‘ These “ Good-nights ”, Felix, break my heart,  
I’m only gay till you are gone ’ :

the county ball, Felix's attempts to become a politician by

studying 'ethics, politics, and laws', and more successfully to escort the Dean's girls to the Cowes Regatta; and so home to his own house, which is soon to be hers. Even the most trivial of the incidents are often keenly contrived. For instance, on one occasion, Honoria sits playing the piano; Vaughan enters and Honoria re-acts Aunt Maude's comment on the engagement:

'You, with your looks and catching air  
To think of Vaughan! You fool! You know,  
You might with ordinary care,  
Ev'n yet be Lady Clitheroe.'

And Honoria makes Vaughan take this very aunt in, on his arm, to dinner. So a mosaic of commonplace detail is pieced together into the story of the wedding, the honeymoon, and the meeting with Frederick Graham, the unsuccessful lover.

The texture of this poetry and the material from which it is made are in revolt with all that nineteenth century poetry had inherited from the romantic movement. It goes back in its acceptance of the commonplace scene to Crabbe and in its faith in the ordinary life to Wordsworth's ballads of 1798. Its strength can best be judged by comparison with either of those earlier exploitations of the same type of material. The main aspect of the romantic tradition accepted by the nineteenth century poets was that of Coleridge and Keats, the marvellous, the weird, and the magically adorned. Victorian poetry had achieved much upon that background, but the danger was one of a narrow interest, a belief that poetry had to be of one type. Patmore was reasserting that poetry could do other things; from his close study of Tennyson he had developed a vocabulary and method of his own to achieve them. It was easy to parody the manner and theme, and Swinburne was amongst those who fell into the temptation. But Wordsworth cannot be revealed in the terms of Anti-Jacobin criticism, and Patmore cannot be judged by the parody of his weakest lines. Weak lines exist, such as Honoria's farewell to her family:

'Mary, you'll make Papa his tea  
At eight exactly.'

Such flat lines only reveal the incredible risk involved in conveying this contemporary and commonplace theme in a poetic



medium, and their infrequency is a measure of Patmore's poetic success.

The criticism so far has been confined to the narrative sections of Books I and II ; but swathing these around are the Preludes and Epigrams which reveal Patmore's philosophy of nuptial love. They are the sections that Patmore remodelled most severely in the successive editions of the poems. The general trend of that revision seems to have been to separate more distinctly prelude and narrative in style and diction. Patmore seems increasingly to suggest that the narrative of lovers' lives may seem commonplace but that their elucidation reveals a meaning as profound as that of life itself. Further, he continued to expand the Preludes as fresh elaborations occurred to him, without modifying the original conception.

The philosophy of love and marriage which can be extracted from them loses much once it is wrenched away from Patmore's words. The purpose of the whole poem, he confesses, is a moral one : ' You shall be sweetly help'd and warn'd.' The Primal Love is God, the power that grants wings and voices to the singing birds, and through Love man may come to the Godly. Woman ' less marr'd than man by mortal fall ' is the only way to this Love, and so she is the Angel, the representative of God :

And round her happy footsteps blow  
The authentic airs of Paradise.

Woman's presence is a check to evil and the uncouth ; to her, the arts and the sense of the decorative owe the source of their inspiration. Man will do anything for woman, and woman should not disregard her degree or cheapen her qualities. Man can only develop by honouring woman, and if she insists on that honour man will cast off his ' gross regality of strength ' and the true, mystical, nuptial love will arise. For woman is Love and man is Truth ; Love is the substance, man the form :

So, dancing round the Tree of Life,  
They make an Eden in her breast.

Some do not see the strength of nuptial love : they seek the airy insubstantiality of Plato or the earthiness of Anacreon.

For Patmore nuptial love is permanent in life and is more spiritual than virginity :

Virgins are they, before the Lord,  
     Whose hearts are pure : the vestal fire  
 Is not, as some misread the word, '  
     By marriage quench'd but burns the higher.

With marriage wooing does not cease, for the 'undrest, familiar' style is not for the friend that we respect. The philosophy found in Books I and II is later set out more consecutively in *The Wedding Sermon*, the concluding poem of *The Victories of Love*. Here Patmore shows that all love is of desire or benevolence, but all desire we owe to God, and through nuptial love desire transmutes itself to Divine benevolence.

Justice has never been done to the subtlety of Patmore's thought nor to the poetic strength with which it is expressed. Ruskin represents the popular view when he quotes a passage from *The Angel in the House* in *Sesame and Lilies*, and wishes that the lines 'were learned by all youthful ladies of England'. The following is the powerful and closely packed extract which Ruskin selected :

Ah, wasteful woman, she that may  
     On her sweet self set her own price,  
 Knowing he cannot choose but pay,  
     How has she cheapen'd paradise ;  
 How given for naught her priceless gift,  
     How spoil'd the bread and spill'd the wine,  
 Which, spent with due, respective thrift,  
     Had made brutes men, and men divine.

Let the youthful ladies of England learn them if they wish, but such lines, with their cunning recall of Satan's speech to Eve in *Paradise Lost* <sup>4</sup> ('I of brutes, human, ye of human Gods'), need not be confined to them or to their moral edification.

Patmore wrote two other parts to *The Angel*, and then left the poem incomplete. Already in Book II he had written a pathetic poem of the lover who has premonition of the death of the beloved, and at the close of the year 1862, when his wife died, he wrote : 'I no longer have at every step, the

needful encouragement of an approval which was all that my heart valued of fame'; and he adds that the poem, as first conceived in his mind, was to have concluded with 'the subject of the hope which remains for individual love in death'.

*Faithful for Ever* and *The Victories of Love* differ in form and mood from the first two books. They are set out in the form of letters between the main characters, and their metrical form is the octosyllabic couplet. We see Frederick Graham, the unsuccessful suitor of Honoria, a naval officer with deeds in India to his credit, married to Jane, the chaplain's daughter. The opinions of friends and relations on Jane are contrived with a satiric finish not unworthy of an Austen novel. Jane, conscious of the grandeur of her husband's world, writes a pathetic little note to her mother. Once she has children of her own she opens out a little in her correspondence and displays a deal of good-heartedness mingled with a little vulgarity. She so improves her manners that Lady Clitheroe, who had once said of her

H is her Shibboleth. 'Tis said  
Her Mother was a Kitchen-Maid.

revises her judgment and discovers her '*outrée* and natural'. Jane and Frederick visit the Vaughans and Frederick discovers a modified attitude in Honoria :

I confess  
I love her rather more than less !  
But she alone was loved of old ;  
Now love is twain, nay, manifold ;  
For, somehow, he whose daily life  
Adjusts itself to one true wife,  
Grows to a nuptial, near degree  
With all that's fair and womanly.

Jane loses two of her children and finally feels the touch of death on herself. In her letter she discusses the immortality of love, and tells Frederick that love without immortality is mockery. Her letters are the simplest and most poignant expression of Patmore's teaching. Jane by her love has developed love in Frederick, and so these third and fourth parts are made to develop the argument of Books I and II.

It has been frequently suggested that these later sections

fall far beneath the level of Books I and II. Such criticism mistakes the scheme of the poem. Books I and II elaborate the philosophy, but they relate it only to the happily-wedded Vaughans. The picture of the Grahams shows the growth of nuptial love from less hopeful circumstances. In these later books there is a richer view of humour and satire, a more generous basis of evidence for Patmore's theories. He has contrived to present in verse the content of a domestic novel ; he attempts even more than in the earlier books to bring back into poetry the breath of common life. We are reminded frequently of Crabbe's matter-of-fact methods and brazen disregard of possible bathos : so Jane to Mrs. Graham,

Also to thank you for the frocks  
And shoes for Baby. I, (D.V.),  
Shall wean him soon. Fred goes to sea  
No more.

Yet in the later sections Patmore creates securely a group of characters—Frederick, Jane, Mrs. Graham, Lady Clitheroe, and others—who possess distinct features. So clearly fashioned are they that the Vaughans appear sometimes a little colourless by their side. *The Angel in the House*, as a whole, constitutes such an original and daring element in the poetry of the whole century that it may be suggested that Patmore should stand with Tennyson, Browning, and Arnold as one of the major poets of his age.

It is difficult to tell when Patmore first began to write odes. The earlier ones are so filled with memory of Emily Patmore that it is natural to feel that they were written soon after her death in 1863.<sup>5</sup> The nine odes printed in 1868 were all republished in *The Unknown Eros* collection of 1877.<sup>6</sup> There were elaborate revisions of individual odes from one edition to another. Patmore seems early to have hoped that through the odes he might give poetic expression to varied aspects of one idea. In 1868 he already states this ambition : ' I meant to have extended and developed this series of odes until they formed an integral work expressing an idea which I have long had at heart.' He adds, rather incongruously, that his despair at the ' disenfranchisement of the upper and middle classes in 1867 by the false English nobles and their Jew ' discouraged

him from his attempt. Only in 1890 did he present *The Unknown Eros* as a sequence in two books possessive of a unity of purpose, and it is from this volume that the poems have been examined.

In form and diction these poems differ widely from the octosyllabics of *The Angel in the House*. The lines may vary from two syllables to sixteen syllables and there are no stanzas. One would imagine that such poems were irregular Pindaric (*numeris lege solutis*), but Patmore had very different ideas on the form. The odes, he asserted, depended upon pause, and with a true interpretation of that pause all the lines were of the same length from the 'long-drawn sigh of two syllables to the passionate cataract of sixteen'. Patmore himself described the measure<sup>7</sup> as 'iambic tetrameter with unlimited catalexis, which is commonly called "irregular" ode, though it is really as "regular" as any other English metre', and even much more so, if its subtle laws are truly considered and obeyed. With something approaching complacency Patmore adds: 'Owing, again, to the peculiarly and essentially *fluent* character of this metre, it can hardly be used with full success by any poet who has not acquired by long practice in simpler rhythms, that *sense* of metre which is rare even in very good poets.'<sup>8</sup> In 1878 Patmore published as a preface to *Amelia* an essay on *English Metrical Law*, in which he defines these principles at greater length but with less clarity. Patmore's theory had gained little support, but in the odes he has written poems of irregular line lengths which have been acknowledged to possess at their best some inner principle of harmony, though at their worst they fall into arid flatness of the irregular Pindaric. Patmore seems to have realized the esoteric nature of these poems. In the ode *Dead Language* he suggests that his language will not be understood, while in *Prophets who Cannot Sing* he comments on the rarity of verse that shows views of the unveil'd heavens'.

The First Book of *The Unknown Eros* contains the pieces most usually quoted; the selection of themes is more varied, more human than in the closely argued mysticism of the Second Book. Of these odes in Book I, *Toys* is the best known, and the simplest in its analogy from human to religious experience. This and a group of other powerful poems deal with

Patmore's moods after his wife's death. The most poignant is *Departure*, in which he tells his wife,

It was not like your great and gracious ways !  
Do you, that have nought other to lament,  
Never, my Love, repent  
Of how, that July afternoon,  
You went,  
With sudden, unintelligible phrase,  
And frighten'd eye,  
Upon your journey of so many days,  
Without a single kiss, or a good-bye ?

Closely allied with these is *Tired Memory*, in which Patmore describes himself as releasing his wife's memory from earth to heaven, and since love on earth was still necessary for him, he asks God for bliss in which his wife has no part. He admits some treachery in this reunion of himself with love on earth, but pleads that he is ' dead of devotion and tired memory ' :

When a strange grace of thee  
In a fair stranger, as I take it, bred  
To her some tender heed,  
Most innocent  
Of purpose therewith blent,  
And pure of faith, I think to thee.

With such subtle poignancy does Patmore pass from his first marriage to his second.

Combined with these poems of Love in Book I are Patmore's political poems. He is opposed to democracy, to the franchise, to Gladstone, to ' the Jew ', and from the midst of this network of reaction he sees England's irretrievable decline. England still possessed ' the ghostly grace of her transfigured past ', but that was all. Fortunately Patmore's poetry usually dealt with the things he loved, but the barrenness of the vain, protesting voice is heard more clearly in this First Book than elsewhere.

Book II of *The Unknown Eros* is Patmore's final expression of his philosophy of Love. If in *The Angel* he considered how human love can lead to heaven, he here contemplates how all earthly love is but the symbol of the Soul's love for God. The central poem is *Sponsa Dei*, where this philosophy is most clearly expounded :

Who is this Fair  
Whom each hath seen,

Who is this only happy She,  
Whom, by a frantic flight of courtesy,  
Born of despair  
Of better lodging for his Spirit fair,  
He adores as Margaret, Maude, or Cecily ?

The conception found in *Sponsa Dei* permeates the other odes. The opening poem suggests that this esoteric love of God and the Soul will demand an unusual expression :

In what veil'd hymn  
Or mystic dance  
Would he that were thy Priest advance ;

and in the odes which follow he isolates different aspects of this mystical union. In *The Contract* he describes the nuptials of Adam and Eve, who seek some voluntary discipline to the 'mutual free contract' of their 'virgin spousals'. In *To the Body*, the ode which comes closest to a seventeenth-century manner, he speaks in an impassioned way of the glory of the body :

Little, sequester'd pleasure-house  
For God and for His Spouse.

So in *Deliciæ Sapientiæ de Amore* he associates the love of the Virgin Mother, and that of the brides of Christ in their cells, with the love of all to whom 'generous Love, by any name, is dear'. There follows a series of odes in which the figures of Eros and Psyche are substituted for those of God and the Virgin, or of God and the Soul. Though described in the terms of human love the full intent of these poems lies in their symbolical interpretation. Patmore endeavours to explore the relationship of the soul to God, and, of this, human love at its purest is only an image. The poems reveal at the same time the motions and moods of human love with detailed subtlety. The culmination of this purpose can be seen in *The Child's Purchase*, the most elaborate poem, both in form and thought, in the whole sequence. Here he attempts to transcend all other praise he has made of woman in a direct hymn of praise to the Virgin-Mother herself. The poem is varied at

irregular intervals by the prayer 'Ora pro me', which gives a strophic effect not found in the other pieces.

In 1890 *Amelia* and other poems in the ode form were published in the same volume as *The Unknown Eros*. *Amelia*, an irregular ode with a narrative theme, portrays the poet's love for his second wife, though the memory of his first dead love is still quick within him. The solemnity of movement cannot extinguish a latent sentimentality, and certainly the poem has nothing of the rare sensitiveness of approach which marked the treatment of the same subject in *Tired Memory*. Of the other poems in the 1890 volume *Regina Cæli*, a simple address to the Virgin, 'mild, silent little Maid', is a pendant to *The Unknown Eros*, and there are poems on miscellaneous themes.

The irregular ode in Patmore's hands became an intricate form. His themes were unusual, and even when his vocabulary was simple the words were often fashioned into such strange symbols and thoughts that his meaning was difficult to unravel. So in Psyche's words to Eros in *Eros and Psyche*:

And this thy kiss  
A separate secret by none other scann'd;  
Though well I wis  
The whole of life is womanhood to thee,  
Momently wedded with enormous bliss.

Though no word is strange the content cannot be revealed without some knowledge of Patmore's whole philosophy. In a few of the poems Patmore uses unusual words ('shaw', 'photosphere', 'prepense-occulted', 'draff'), but although the vocabulary is more involved than in *The Angel*, difficulties arising directly out of vocabulary are infrequent. In his early poetry Patmore had avoided imagery, and had even suggested that the highest poetry existed without it. Into the odes, imagery intrudes, an imagery like that of the metaphysical poets, original, difficult, intellectual. So, in *Saint Valentine's Day*, Love is told to go to all-amorous May:

Go to her summons gay,  
Thy heart with dead, wing'd Innocencies fill'd,  
Ev'n as a nest with birds  
After the old ones by the hawk are kill'd.



Further, the irregular line in the odes leads to difficulties of syntax which serve to obscure a meaning already complex. Yet when all is allowed it is the theme, the combination of sensuous and mystical elements, that gives the odes their esoteric quality. Further, by some unusual combination of abstract and concrete words, he has developed an individualized vocabulary, which, strangely enough, seems to have gained suggestions from his reading of Ford.<sup>9</sup> To the generality the First Book of *The Unknown Eros*, with its recognizable human themes, will probably yield more than the passionate symbolism which Patmore valued so much in the poems of the Second Book, yet it is in these later pieces that his most individual contribution is to be found.

Those who read the life of Patmore by Richard Garnett<sup>10</sup> may be startled by the summary of his personality: 'Instead of an insipid amiability, his dominant characteristic was a rugged angularity, steeped in Rembrandt-like contrasts of light and gloom. Haughty, imperious, combative, sardonic, he was at the same time sensitive, susceptible, and capable of deep tenderness.' Patmore does not reveal his whole personality in his poetry: sometimes one feels that his poetic personality existed apart from his ordinary individuality. It is true that his gloomy, reactionary preoccupations intrude sometimes, and his aggressive Catholicism. He is led even to make the Pythoness say to Psyche:

Child, anyone, to hear you speak,  
Would take you for a Protestant.

But from his poetry we could not have pictured that arrogance before friends, that desire to lecture fellow-poets, which occur frequently in the life. Nor does the poet of *The Angel* always figure well in his comments on women: 'Mrs. Tennyson has had a son born dead; I am very sorry for this, as I think, that the sooner Tennyson has a few children about him the better it will be for his mental health and comfort.'<sup>11</sup> The standpoint is selfish and masculine for the creator of Vaughan; Mrs. Tennyson and the children are regarded as sops to Tennyson's mental comfort. Within his poetical work, however, a distinct personality is found, and it is not essential that it should coincide with the words and manners of the Coventry Patmore

of ordinary life. The content and method of that work are one of the original enterprises in the poetry of the later part of the nineteenth century, and it has important parallels and developments.

Among those who owe allegiance to Coventry Patmore none is more openly a disciple than Francis Thompson, and though their work comes to differ widely in content and poetic skill, Patmore consistently welcomed the association of his name with that of Thompson. ('I feel a personal and sort of proprietary interest in the metrical qualities of much of Mr. Thompson's work.')

Francis Thompson's <sup>12</sup> life (1859-1907) has all the qualities of legend. He was born in Preston, where his father was a doctor. Both his parents were converts to the Roman Catholic Church, and in 1870 he was sent to Ushaw College, near Durham, to be trained for the priesthood. Here he studied until his father received, in 1877, a letter from the President regretting that 'a natural indolence' made Thompson unsuited for the Church. In the same year he was entered as a student of medicine at Owens College, Manchester. His father seems to have persuaded him to this course, and although Thompson had a physical repulsion for the sight of blood or of dead bodies in the dissecting-room, he appears silently to have acquiesced. He was in Manchester for six years, although little of his time was spent in medical studies. A serious illness in 1879, and the presentation by his mother of a copy of De Quincey's *The Confessions of an English Opium Eater* led him to take opium. His father made a further attempt to give him a career, by entering him as a student at Glasgow University, but failure was inevitable. After a number of shifts he found himself back in Manchester in 1885. He failed to declare to his family his poetical ambitions ('If the lad had but told me') and, to his long-suffering father, he appeared as merely an idle fellow who liked to 'lead a dawdling, sauntering sort of life'.

In November 1885, almost destitute, and without hope, he came to London. Everard Meynell <sup>12</sup> has told the story of the years that follow: the doss-houses; the odd jobbing; the free library when a few shillings had been sent from home; opium; the writing of prose and verse in old account-books and

sometimes at night the shelter of a railway-arch or of an embankment seat; then the manuscript sent to *Merry England*; the delay; the publication of a poem; the encounter with Wilfrid Meynell the editor, and the discovery that the wife of the editor was a poetess, Alice Meynell, who could give encouragement that was more valuable than charity.

The turning-point in Thompson's career, both physically and as a poet, dates from his friendship with the Meynells. It was they who persuaded him to enter a hospital and to fight his drug habit, and they who sent him to Storrington Priory to recuperate. At Storrington he wrote most of the pieces which appear in his first volume, *Poems* (1893). *Sister Songs* followed in 1895. From 1893 to 1897 Thompson spent most of his time at Pantasaph, in North Wales, in a Franciscan monastery, and here he composed most of the *New Poems* (1897), along with a number of prose pieces. The last years, despite all the ministrations of friends, were darkened by his ill-health and the gnawing desire for drugs and for alcohol. In the summer of 1907 he entered the Hospital of St. Elizabeth and St. John in London and there in November of the same year he died. Much of his prose, including the Shelley essay (1909), was published posthumously, and in 1913 Wilfrid Meynell issued his collected *Works* in verse and prose in three volumes.

Francis Thompson has never been judged dispassionately: he fell among friends, who nurtured his talent, shared his faith and found joy in his poetic expression of mystical experience. It was only natural that critics outside the group should approach this favoured poet with a mood of potential disparagement. This conflict of opinion sets in with the first volume of 1893. Coventry Patmore<sup>13</sup> concurred in the opinion that he was a 'greater Crashaw', and looked to him to explore 'the inexhaustible and hitherto almost unworked mine of Catholick philosophy'. Andrew Lang,<sup>14</sup> a month later, wrote in an article on *The Young Men* that the general effect of Thompson's poetry was 'not of originality but of a conscientious and strenuous *bizarrierie*'. Adverse criticism was more general after the publication of *New Poems* in 1897, and Patmore was no longer alive to praise the poet.

*Poems* (1893) contained three groups of poems: *Love in Dian's Lap*; *Miscellaneous Poems*, including *The Hound of*

*Heaven*; and *Poems on Children. Love in Dian's Lap* comprises a series of odes, describing a love at times Platonic and at times mystical, into which influences from Shelley's *Epipsy-chidion* and Patmore's *The Unknown Eros* have intruded. The poems arose from Thompson's reverence for Alice Meynell. Throughout these pieces he has undoubtedly fresh thought to express, but it is a thought which never gains adequate poetic embodiment. Frequently he allows himself to be deceived by a fine-sounding, meaningless rhetorical phrase:

Within your spirit's arms I stay me fast  
Against the fell  
Immitigate ravening of the gates of hell! <sup>15</sup>

He tortures sentences out of their grammatical word order without introducing compensating effects of euphony:

Too wearily had we and song  
Been left to look and left to long,  
Yea, song and we to long and look,  
Since thine acquainted feet forsook  
The mountain where the Muses hymn  
For Sinai and the Seraphim. <sup>16</sup>

With the pattern of the metaphysical poets before him, particularly of Donne and Crashaw, he is led, as Alice Meynell detected, to elevate imagery to the supreme place in poetry. Unfortunately he lacked the mental alertness, the intellectual strenuousness which, as Donne had shown, can alone sustain such a method. His images are frequently trailing draperies of fustian rhetoric. His vocabulary, with its far-sought words, confirms this impression. Patmore had given his authority for the employment of an esoteric language in poetry, and the crabbed, hard terms of the metaphysicals presented a further model. Thompson in employing these devices is seldom free from poetical dependence upon one or other of his predecessors. Nor is it the type of derivation which enriches the poetry of Milton and Gray, where the borrowed phrase is so aptly introduced that its beauty is increased by the memory of its previous employment. Frequently Thompson, like Wilde, has the dependence of one who has not sufficient native strength to move without support. <sup>17</sup> *The Athenæum* detected

this element in Thompson when the volume of 1893 first appeared: 'He has been impressed by certain styles, in themselves incompatible, indeed implying the negation of one another—that of Crashaw, for instance, and that of Mr. Patmore—and he has deliberately mixed them, against the nature of things. Thus his work, with all its splendours, has the impress of no individuality; it is a splendour of rays and patches, a very masque of anarchy.' <sup>18</sup>

*The Hound of Heaven*, which is the central poem in the *Miscellaneous* section, is not without some of the disfiguring qualities of the love odes, but in strength of conception and in achievement it is of a different category. One has to exempt it, as Johnson was led to exempt the *Elegy* from his general strictures on Gray's poetry, and for some of the same reasons. It has a universality which gives it an appeal to many who are not interested in poetry as a whole, nor studious of the niceties of form and vocabulary. Its central theme, familiar to mystical writers, was derived by Thompson from the *Confessions* of St. Augustine. Thompson's strength lay in his power to illustrate poetically the pursuit of the soul by God, and seldom has spiritual experience been wrought with such certainty into the symbols drawn from the images of possible human experience. Here he controlled his decorative virtuosity to the central poetic purpose. He was not equally successful in *A Corymbus for Autumn*; the poem dazzles the reader with its imagery, but it is imagery in riot:

Gipsy of Seasons, ere thou go winging;  
     Ere Winter throws  
     His slaking snows  
 In thy feasting-flagon's impurpurate glows!  
 The sopped sun—toper as ever drank hard—  
     Stares foolish, hazed,  
     Rubicund, dazed,  
 Totty with thine October tankard.

He exercises more restraint in his ode on Cardinal Manning, *To the Dead Cardinal of Westminster*:

I will not perturbate  
 Thy Paradisal state  
     With praise  
 Of thy dead days.

With this simpler movement, which he uses again in *Any Saint*, he attains his effect with that same economy employed by George Herbert in *Discipline*.

The *Poems on Children*, with which the volume concludes, form Thompson's least ambitious but possibly most effective poetic achievement in this volume. Poetic borrowing is again marked. *To Monica Thought Dying* is consciously imitative of Patmore's *Odes*, and a gentle and gracious poem, *The Making of Viola*, develops a more distinct Pre-Raphaelite influence than is frequent in Thompson's work. Above all these is *Daisy* which has a lyrical quality that transcends in poetical value the rhetorical effects of Thompson's more elaborate poems. In its closing epigrammatic stanza, he captures the movement of Gray's conclusion to his *Eton College* ode, yet for once he has given a fresh reality to the borrowed element.

*Sister Songs*, as Thompson states in the first edition of the poem, 'though new in the sense of being now for the first time printed, was written some four years ago, about the same date as the "Hound of Heaven" in my former volume'. In content, this long poetic rhapsody is Thompson's *Prelude*; a record of his spiritual experience mingled with praise of nature and of the two sisters (Monica and Sylvia) who helped him to attain possession of himself and of his own powers. Unfortunately, the poetic medium is not disciplined blank verse as in Wordsworth's *Prelude*, but an irregular form with occasional reminiscence of the *Ode on Intimations of Immortality*. In this, his longest poem, the imperfections of his craftsmanship are apparent, despite the strong interest of his central theme. He is dominated by the conception that poetry lives in imagery, and his mind evolves tortuous comparisons which obscure his meaning. The nature images have been frequently praised, and the following example shows their peculiar quality:

I know in the lane, by the hedgerow track,  
The long, broad grasses underneath  
Are warted with rain like a toad's knobbed back;  
But here May weareth a rainless wreath.

Spontaneity has been deliberately avoided, and any pleasure derived must arise from the triumph of the reader's intellect over perplexing material. Thompson's inadequacy can be more

clearly seen in passages where the phrasing or the sense seems to derive from one of frequent memories of earlier poets. For example, in *The Ancient Mariner* Coleridge uses the image of music to describe the sounds of a troop of angelic spirits :

And now 'twas like all instruments,  
Now like a lonely flute.

Coleridge's simple sufficiency of phrasing has been distraught by the hordes of prismatic words in Thompson's description :

'Twas like no earthly instrument,  
Yet had something of them all  
In its rise, and in its fall ;  
As if in one sweet consort there were blent  
Those archetypes celestial  
Which our endeavouring instruments recall.  
So heavenly flutes made murmurous plain  
To heavenly viols, that again  
—Aching with music—wailed back pain.

Nor is this more than a small portion of his elaboration. An ornate style can possess many virtues, complicated, sophisticated beauties which a direct style has to sacrifice, but such effects can only be gained if there lies a centre of clarity in the writer's own mind. Thompson confuses intricacy with poetic success ; he evolves a poetic baroque, and loses himself in the *bravura* of detail, until words infect his poetry like a multi-coloured plague. To employ the terms of romantic criticism, the poem sacrifices imagination to fancy, the revelation of the significant experience to incidental device. In one passage of *Sister Songs* Thompson describes the most moving incident of his destitute days : he was penniless and starving, and a prostitute sheltered him, fed him, and asked nothing in exchange. In prose Thompson has described this with complete adequacy, but in the verse he has decked and bejewelled it beyond all recognition. The prostitute has become ' a flower fallen from the budded coronal of Spring ', and all else has suffered from decorative periphrasis.

On his last volume, *New Poems* (1897), Thompson left an explanatory note in manuscript : ' This book represents the work of the three years which have elapsed since my first volume was prepared for the press, my second volume having

been a poem of comparatively early date. The first section exhibits mysticism in a limited and varying degree. I feel my instrument yet too imperfect to profane by it the higher ranges. Much is transcendental rather than truly mystic. The opening poem, *The Mistress of Vision*, is a fantasy with no more than an illusive tinge of psychic significance.' <sup>19</sup> The poem to which Thompson refers is the most original in the volume. It opens with a description of Paradise :

Secret was the garden;  
Set i' the pathless awe.

Within dwells the Mistress of Vision, and the poet wishes that he could capture into verse her sweet, wise, sorrowful song. While distrusting his own powers, he ventures to recall a few moments of her vision, but the attempt leads him back to recognize his deficiencies :

O dismay !  
I, a wingless mortal, sporting  
With the tresses of the sun ?  
I, that dare my hand to lay  
On the thunder in its snorting ?  
Ere begun,  
Falls my singed song down the sky,  
even the old Icarian way.

The conclusion is a dialogue between the poet and the lady, in which she attempts to initiate him into the ways of wisdom. The poem has a vocabulary which is not self-conscious and rhetorical ; the theme transcends the words, and the style is subservient to the creative intention. More than in any other of his poems one senses the poet breaking through and taking possession. Yet certain elements mar its perfection, and seem a product of that 'natural indolence' against which the President of Ushaw College complained. It is strange, for instance, to find in a poem which dwells in memories of Crashaw a line which has suddenly slipped in from Kipling :

So fearfully the sun doth sound  
Clanging up beyond Cathay ;  
For the great earthquaking sunrise rolling up beyond Cathay.

Apart from such incidental grotesque features the poem has a lack of unity as the brief summary has shown. Possibly the



memory of Coleridge's 'damsel with a dulcimer' from *Kubla Khan* is responsible for the sudden divergences of theme. Thompson confesses, however, that the poem was fantasy, and to demand a close sequence in the argument is to exact more than has been promised. The other poems in this volume share with *The Mistress of Vision* a developing discipline in poetic method; it appears in the mystical poems, *The Dread of Height* ('Though sweet be great, and though my heart be small'), and *To Any Saint*; it gives cohesion to the series of love poems, *A Narrow Vessel*, and it reveals itself in the form of simple verses, on the model of R. L. Stevenson, *Ex Ore Infantium*:

Little Jesus, wast Thou shy  
Once, and just so small as I?

Thompson, however, has not deserted his profuse and irregular splendours; they are emblazoned on such poems as *Ode to the Setting Sun*, *An Anthem of Earth*, and *Orient Ode*. They can be studied more precisely in his translations from Hugo's *Feuilles d'Automne*.

*The Collected Works* (1913) added a number of miscellaneous pieces, but little of importance. He had written journalistic poems, without deserting his intricate vocabulary or his irregular ode form: Queen Victoria had thus been commemorated on her Diamond Jubilee, and so was Cecil Rhodes celebrated on his death in 1902. A series of sonnets displayed openly a debt to Mrs. Alice Meynell, whose influence on his poetry appears to have been of a pervasive and salutary nature.

Thompson's reputation will probably change more than that of most of his contemporaries. Seldom, one imagines, will he be again compared to Shakespeare as he was in his lifetime. Some few of his verses will enter into that small collection of poems generally known, the anthology common to persons of good taste: *Daisy* will be there, and *The Hound of Heaven*, perhaps some others. Those who share his faith will find in many of his poems the expression of a Catholic mysticism, and their enthusiasm for the subject-matter cannot fail to excuse the possible inadequacies of the verse. In judging Thompson one is driven to judge him by the standard of the great writers, Donne, Crashaw, Coleridge, Shelley. Such were his models, and lines from them dart in and out of his poems like lightning

flashes, and sometimes, though rarely, he has an original quality, not unlike that of the masters he imitated.

His prose is more secure than his verse ; *Shelley, Paganism Old and New*, the essay on poets and prose writers have a consistent strength and clarity of purpose. In the essay on *Shelley* he speaks in general terms of the poetry of his time : ' Contemporary poetry in general, as compared with the poetry of the early nineteenth century, is mildewed. That defect is the predominance of art over inspiration, of body over soul. We do not say the *defect* of inspiration. The warrior is there, but he is hampered by his armour. Theoretically, of course, one ought always to try for the best word. But practically, the habit of excessive care in word-selection frequently results in loss of spontaneity ; and, still worse, the habit of always taking the best word too easily becomes the habit of always taking the most ornate word, the word most removed from ordinary speech. In consequence of this, poetic diction has become latterly a kaleidoscope, and one's chief curiosity is as to the precise combinations into which the pieces will be shifted. There is, in fact, a certain band of words, the Praetorian cohorts of poetry, whose prescriptive aid is invoked by every aspirant to the poetical purple—against these it is time some banner should be raised '. Thompson's strictures on contemporary verse can be applied in every particular to his own poetry, though it would not be right to suggest that he made any such application himself. Yet signs are not wanting that by 1897 he was realizing, partly through the influence of Alice Meynell, that his trust in the cohorts of poetic words had been misplaced. ' I who can scarcely speak my fellows' speech,' he writes in *Sister Songs*, and so one feels that he is struggling in some of his poems to the expression of an experience which is strange in a medium which he has not fully comprehended. He has, however, like Coleridge, a poetic transfiguration in some few poems ; his defects are transcended and he sees with heightened clarity, uniting vision to expression.

A unity of faith and personal contacts brings Alice Meynell <sup>20</sup> (1847-1922) into intimate association with Patmore and Thompson. Her life seems to the outward observer a fortunate one : she was born into a family of artistic tastes and

accomplishments. Her mother, Christina Weller, was a musician of professional competence and her father, Thomas James Thompson, who lived on a income inherited 'from property in the West Indies and in Lancashire', occupied himself, after an unsuccessful interlude in Liberal politics, with travel and the arts. The two daughters of the Thompson family had the education of leisured and cultured nomads: Elizabeth (Lady Butler) soon showed an aptitude for drawing and she has presented her life vividly in *An Autobiography*. Alice was interested in words, and strict paternal supervision of studies gave her a wide background in at least three literatures.

In 1877 she married Wilfrid Meynell. Her literary interest, which had already found expression in *Preludes* (1875), now extended into journalism. Wilfrid Meynell started the short-lived *Pen*; he had a strong and continued connexion with *The Dublin Review*, and, in 1883, he started a new monthly, *Merry England*, which not only had the distinction of discovering Francis Thompson but had among its contributors most Catholic writers of merit. Alice Meynell shared in all phases of this journalistic work. She wrote frequently, and her prose became a distinct institution in the literature of the period. Editors, unconnected with Wilfrid Meynell, called for her work—Henley in *The National Observer*, *The Pall Mall Gazette* (for the series found in *Ceres Runaway*), *The Spectator*, and *The Saturday Review*. Apart from journalism, her family life developed. Critics have spoken sometimes of the small poetic output of Alice Meynell; it is easy to forget that, unlike the Brontës, George Eliot, and Christina Rossetti, she was the mother of eight children, among whom were Everard, who wrote the life of Francis Thompson, and Viola, a novelist of distinction and Alice Meynell's biographer.

Her literary activity, as a bibliography of her work shows, was mainly in prose essays and in editing anthologies, and selections. Her poetic output is small, though it is spread over a large number of individual volumes. *Preludes* (1875) was written when she was still Alice Thompson, and had 'illustrations and ornaments' by Elizabeth. There followed at considerable intervals slim volumes: *Poems* (1893); *Other Poems* (1896) (a private issue); *Later Poems* (1901); *The Shepherdess and Other Verses* (1914); two privately issued

volumes, *Poems on the War* (1915) and *Ten Poems* (1915); *A Father of Women* (1917); *The Last Poems* (a posthumous publication) (1923). Apart from these, a collected edition, entitled *Poems*, had been issued in 1913, and this was published with additions in 1921 and 1923. The whole of this work can be effectively gathered in one small volume of lyrical poetry.

Her life must have been crowded with activity and experience, but the image of her that dwells in the poems is of silence and withdrawal. 'Her wish,' writes her sister, 'was to keep her personality always retired.' This she achieves within her poems, although the mood is often lyrical and personal. In close keeping with this restraint lay her poetic sense of verbal economy. Among her prose criticisms can be found estimates of the two foremost women poets of the century. Of Mrs. Browning she wrote: 'Her poetry has genius. It is abundant and exuberant, precipitate and immoderate; but these are faults of style and not deficiencies of faculties. When she is gentle she is classic and all but perfect.'<sup>21</sup> On Christina Rossetti she comments: 'Much of her work, indeed, would be greatly the better for the friction of what D. G. Rossetti called "fundamental brain-work". Ease is good, but—if the paradox may be permitted—it must be ease won at a certain cost.'<sup>22</sup> Ease and exuberance she exorcized from her verse, aiming at a classic severity of effect, simple and compact. It accounts, along with other reasons, for the smallness of her output.

Her art becomes thus hedged in with inhibitions, both from her discipline of style and the delicacy of her personal reticence. The cloistral perfection of her verse has been gained by rejecting the temptations of much that has added powerful, stormy, immoderate qualities to the verse of other poets. In her best pieces there dwells a quiet security imaged with unerring clarity, as in *Renouncement*, a sonnet which has been frequently isolated as her best single poem:

I must not think of thee; and, tired yet strong,  
I shun the thought that lurks in all delight—  
The thought of thee—and in the blue Heaven's height,  
And in the sweetest passage of a song.

Such is the first quatrain; the movement of the poem gathers additional strength in the changed mood of the sestet:

But when sleep comes to close each difficult day,  
 When night gives pause to the long watch I keep,  
 And all my bonds I needs must loose apart,  
 Must doff my will as raiment laid away,—  
 With the first dream that comes with the first sleep,  
 I run, I run, I am gathered to thy heart.

She knew the sonnet from her early reading of Dante and Petrarch, and it is the Italian form that she employs. In such poems, as *We Never Meet, My Heart shall be Thy Garden, I Touched the Heart that loved Me*, she showed how well adapted was the precision of the sonnet, to her studied art. She used a number of other lyrical forms, and, though it is difficult to assign definite influence, her deep admiration of Tennyson and Rossetti, of Mrs. Browning and of Christina Rossetti enters fitfully into her work. Her metrical command gives all her work an identity of quality, the impress of her gentle yet austere personality; this can be seen at its simplest in *The Shepherdess*:

She walks—the lady of my delight—  
 A shepherdess of sheep.  
 Her flocks are thoughts. She keeps them white;  
 She guards them from the steep;  
 She feeds them on the fragrant height,  
 And folds them in for sleep.

The same severe control can be seen in the more elaborate cadences of the poem which opens:

Oh, not more subtly silence strays  
 Amongst the winds, between the voices,  
 Mingling alike with pensive lays,  
 And with the music that rejoices,  
 Than thou art present in my days.

In her later collections she rejected a number of pieces from *Preludes* (1875), including the long blank verse dramatic monologue *A Study*. She was right in detecting in them the sadness of adolescent *malaise*, yet this first volume had a larger and more generous movement than the narrower perfection of her later verse. Three main themes penetrate into the quietude of her mature poetry: love, nature, and religion. Her love poetry has a keenly individual vocabulary, as can be seen in

the sonnet *Renouncement*. The nature poetry is a rare capturing of mood, a presentation of verbal miniatures: *A Dead Harvest, In Kensington Gardens* is an example which does justice to her achievement:

Along the graceless grass of town  
They rake the rows of red and brown—  
Dead leaves, unlike the rows of hay  
Delicate, touched with gold and grey,  
Raked long ago and far away.

A futile crop!—for it the fire  
Smoulders, and, for a stack, a pyre.  
So go the town's lives on the breeze  
Even as the sheddings of the trees;  
Bosom nor barn is filled with these.

The religious poetry grows into a dominating interest. She does not attempt the mystical themes of Patmore and Thompson; her mind was unattracted by theology and the philosophy of religion. Her power lies in presenting the adoration of the individual worshipper. She explained her attitude in one of her letters: 'You have never realized how incapable I am of philosophy. I really cannot answer your questions. I can only say that when I find a thought worthy of poetry I immediately give thanks for it, and also for such expression as I may have achieved.'<sup>23</sup> Within this range, which she realized so surely to be her own, she developed her religious experience into poems, clear and intelligible. So in the first stanza of *Meditation*:

No sudden thing of glory and fear  
Was the Lord's coming; but the dear  
Slow Nature's days followed each other  
To form the Saviour from his Mother  
—One of the children of the year.

In her latest work she made an excursion into war poetry, speaking more passionately, even more stridently, than was her custom. Some of these poems may suffer the taint of ephemerality, but *Summer in England* (1914) has a humanity that transcends the conditions under which it was written.

In each of the women poets within this period there has been a sense of withdrawal from life, which affects their poetry.

Alice Meynell had a richer human experience than any of them, and yet in a subtle way she holds herself apart. 'With her children,' her daughter writes, 'she had always preserved the privacy and formality of a stranger in her personal things so that even in all the crowded life of their childhood they had never once seen her unfinished or unprepared.' So in her poetry, all has been examined and set in place before it appears in the publicity of print, but one feels that in process of rejection much that was valuable in that 'crowded life' was expunged.

1. For a study of the Catholic elements in poetry, see *The Catholic Spirit in Modern English Literature*, G. N. Shuster (1922). On Coventry Patmore, see Dr. Richard Garnett's notice in *The Dictionary of National Biography*; E. W. Gosse, *Coventry Patmore* (1905); *Memoirs and Correspondence of Coventry Patmore*, B. Champneys (1900), the official biography; *The Idea of Coventry Patmore*, Osbert Burdett (1921). *Essays*, George Brimley (1858), has an early study of *The Angel*; see also Mrs. Alice Meynell's preface to *The Angel in the House* (1905) and the preface to Derek Patmore's *Selected Poems* (1931). There are essays on Patmore in Herbert Read's, *The Great Victorians* (1932); Desmond McCarthy's, *Criticism* (1932), and Shane Leslie's, *Splendid Failures* (1932).

2. *Poems* (1844) is published by Edward Moxon, and *Tamerton Church-Tower and other Poems* (1853) by William Pickering. *The Angel in the House*, *The Betrothal*, was published by John W. Parker in 1854; this was followed by *The Angel in the House*, Book II; *The Espousals* (John W. Parker) in 1856. In 1858 the same publisher issued both books revised, in one volume. In 1860 *Faithful for Ever* (Parker) was published, and in the same year *The Angel in the House* (Books I and II). Parker is the name of the publisher on the title-page and Macmillan on the cover. In 1863 there is a reissue of the Parker volume of 1860, to which a Macmillan title-page, dated 1863, has been inserted. Also in 1863 (presumably taken over by Macmillan) there is an edition of *The Angel in the House*, *Faithful for Ever*, and *The Victories of Love*; some of the earlier poems are also added. In 1866 Macmillan's issued a one-volume edition, all the parts of the *Angel*, with a shorter selection from the earlier poems. In 1878 G. Bell took over *The Angel* (Parts I and II) and issued a new one-volume edition, and a further edition of 1885 (Books I and II); in 1878 G. Bell issued *The Victories of Love*, which is a rearrangement of the poems in *Faithful for Ever* and *The Victories of Love*.

In 1878 *Amelia*, with a number of the early poems, was published, and a long prefatory study of English metrical law. Already in 1868 Patmore had printed privately a collection of nine odes. In 1877 a collection of thirty-one odes was published under the title *The Unknown Eros*, and this was expanded by further editions in 1878 and 1890.

*Amelia* and *L'Allegro*, the two new poems of the 1878 volume, were published in *The Unknown Eros* (1890), though kept apart from the other poems. Both *The Angel* and *The Unknown Eros* have been frequently reprinted.

3. Burdett (loc. cit. in 1) finds a compactness in this poem which I fail to discover.

4. For this reference I am indebted to Professor R. M. Hewitt.

5. In his essay on Francis Thompson Patmore seems to suggest 1867 as the date when he began to write odes. *Fortnightly Review* (London), January 1894.

6. *Whate'er thou dost* and *No praise to me* were extracted from *The Unknown Eros* in 1890 and published separately; *Go up, thou Baldpate* was excluded altogether.

7. In the Francis Thompson essay (loc. cit. in 5).

8. There are some parallels between the prosodic theories of Patmore and of G. M. Hopkins, but no collaboration.

9. *The Times Literary Supplement*, May 12, 1932.

10. In *The Dictionary of National Biography*.

11. Champneys (loc. cit. in 1), vol. I, p. 175.

12. *Francis Thompson*, E. Meynell (revised edition, 1926); *Francis Thompson*, George Ashton Beacock (Marburg, 1912), is an excellent study to which R. L. Mégroz (1927) adds little.

13. Loc. cit. in 5.

14. *The Contemporary Review* (London), February 1894.

15. *Manus Animam Pinxit*.

16. *To a Poet Breaking Silence*.

17. Francis Thompson's debt to other poets and his neologisms have been fully studied by C. A. Beacock (see loc. cit. in 12). This thesis is now difficult to obtain, and I am indebted to Mr. Wilfrid Meynell, who kindly sent me Everard Meynell's copy.

18. *The Athenæum*, Feb. 3, 1894.

19. *Francis Thompson*, E. Meynell (1926).

20. *Alice Meynell*, Viola Meynell (1929); *Mrs. Meynell and her Literary Generation*, Anne K. Tuell (1925). *An Autobiography* (1922), by Mrs. Meynell's sister, Lady Butler, though in itself an interesting volume, contains little information on Mrs. Alice Meynell.

21. *Poems*, E. B. Browning, ed. Alice Meynell (1903).

22. *Poems*, C. G. Rossetti, ed. Alice Meynell (1910).

23. To Professor A. A. Cock, quoted in the life by Viola Meynell (loc. cit. in 20).



## CHAPTER VII

### GEORGE MEREDITH

GEORGE MEREDITH (1828-1909), like Hardy, was known to his own age mainly as a novelist, yet poetry came first and remained with him to the last years of his long life. His biography has been frequently delineated,<sup>1</sup> and here only its main features will be recalled. He emerged from a family of naval outfitters in Portsmouth. About these origins he was always a little mysterious, but he has given the background and a portrait of his grandfather, the memorable Melchizedek Meredith, in *Evan Harrington*. His father, a dim, genial figure, continued the family business without success. Meredith was an only child, and his mother died when he was five. His childhood recollections were coloured with unhappiness, the result probably of his own sensitiveness, rather than of any positive action of his father's. He missed the regular methods of education, and this emphasized both the originality and the waywardness of his nature. It kept him clear of the Victorian background, and detached him from a too close preoccupation with his own age. He was educated at private schools in England, and later, when he was fourteen, he was sent to the Moravian School at Neuwied. This contact with Germany proved the most formative influence of his younger years, and German literature, particularly the works of Heine, Goethe, and Schiller, remained a permanent influence on his mind.<sup>2</sup> Before 1846 he had appeared in London, a handsome youth of brilliant conversational powers. He was articled to a solicitor and had the good fortune to work under Richard Stephen Charnock, whose literary contacts encouraged his interest in letters. It was in Charnock's manuscript magazine *The Monthly Observer* that Meredith's first published poem *Chillianwallah* appeared in 1849. In the same year he published five translations from Heine in *The Monthly Observer*.<sup>3</sup> His poems also gained an entry into *Household Words* and *Chambers's Journal*, and through Charnock he developed an acquaintance with a number of men of letters. Chief among these was Thomas Love Peacock, whose prose style influenced

his novels, and in 1849, without resources or a profession, he married Peacock's daughter, a widow, nine years his senior. He also gained the friendship of R. H. Horne, whose dimly mystical *Orion* had early attracted him. In 1851 he published *Poems*, a selection of his verse, mainly the product of the years 1849-1851. Prose was already occupying him; in 1855 appeared his first prose volume *The Shaving of Shagpat*, and from that year his main literary occupation was novel-writing. His marriage proved a disaster of maladjustment which culminated when his wife deserted him in 1858. A son, Arthur Gryffydd, had been born in 1853, and one of the personal tragedies of Meredith's life was the later alienation and death of this only child. The memory of this marriage coloured the title-poem of his second volume of verse, *Modern Love and other Poems* (1862).

From 1862 Meredith's literary occupations were distractingly diverse. Novel-writing was his main work, but there were periods of journalism, and an episode as correspondent in the Italian-Austrian War of 1866 which gave him the background for his novel *Vittoria*. Further, from 1860-1894 he had to combine his own writing with the routine duties of publisher's reader for Chapman and Hall. His second marriage, contracted in 1864, was as happy as the first had been unfortunate, and Meredith's deep sense of loss in his wife's death in 1885 is recorded in his poem *A Faith on Trial*. Poetry remained an active interest in these crowded middle years, though there was limited leisure for actual accomplishment. In the last decades he returned to the medium which he had always held in the highest regard, and a number of his most memorable volumes were published: *Poems and Lyrics of the Joy of Earth* (1883); *Ballads and Poems of Tragic Life* (1887); *A Reading of Earth* (1888); *Poems, The Empty Purse, with Odes, etc.* (1892); *Odes in Contribution to the Song of French History* (1898); *A Reading of Life* (1901); *Last Poems*, posthumously published in 1909. In 1868 he had moved to Flint Cottage, Box Hill, and Surrey scenes colour the nature references in these volumes. In 1909, at the age of eighty-one, he died.

Meredith's poetry has aroused most contrary critical judgments; all are agreed that it is difficult and that it is new, but varying estimates have been made of its poetical worth.

A chronological study shows that much of his early verse was simple enough, in theme and diction, but that in later years he attempted to reveal poetically a profound philosophical conception. His outlook was so fresh that it demanded for its expression a new style, a new vocabulary, and a new symbolism, and here he was faced with the most difficult task that can confront a poet. He succeeded in defining his philosophy, but he had to banish the easy melodies of his early verse and call frequently upon the service of a language that was harsh and obscure. In some of his later verse this difficult vocabulary, initiated in the philosophical poems, became almost a habit, and so extended its dominion into lyrical and narrative poems where its presence has no rational justification.

Meredith's *Poems* (1851), issued when he was only twenty-three, passed unnoticed apart from friendly reviews by W. M. Rossetti and Charles Kingsley. In later life he spoke abusively of this 'worthless, immature stuff', and he destroyed three hundred 'unwanted copies'. Yet he had already found himself as a poet and achieved some effects which he was never to find again. The best-known of all his lyrics, *Love in the Valley*, now appeared in its earliest form. In 1851 it was a poem of only eleven stanzas: in 1878 he issued a longer version completely remodelled. Both poems share the same exquisite stanza, which, with its cunning quadrisyllabic movement, has given *Love in the Valley* an individual voice amid the lyrics of the century:

When her mother tends her before the laughing mirror,  
Tying up her laces, looping up her hair,  
Often she thinks, were this wild thing wedded,  
More love should I have, and much less care.

Meredith found suggestions for the stanza in George Darley's *Serenade of a Loyal Martyr*:

Sweet in her green cell the Flower of Beauty slumbers,  
Lulled by the faint breezes sighing thro' her hair;  
Sleeps she, and hears not the melancholy numbers,  
Breathed to my sad lute amid the lonely air?

In treatment the two versions are widely diverse: the 1851 poem is a simple lyric of love-longing with a suggestion of the

*Locksley Hall* motive, 'Would she were older and could read my worth'; in 1878 Meredith depicts a more quiescent and secure lover, who contemplates youth and age and death as he sings of his love. In both pieces the love description has a rare quality of innocence, marred only by a few touches of Keats in his Leigh Hunt manner. In both versions the keenest poetic element lies in the relation of nature to the love theme; the second poem has more to give here, although it misses the earlier simplicity.

*Love in the Valley* was but one of the nature poems in the 1851 volume. *Pastorals*, *The Two Blackbirds*, *The Wild Rose and the Snowdrop*, *The Flower of the Ruins*, and *South-West Wind in the Woodland* all arose from the same interest. Much in these poems is descriptive, and Meredith, the chief nature poet after Wordsworth, has a much closer eye for colour and detail than Wordsworth possessed. From nature he was to draw largely the experience which shaped his philosophy: in these early poems the contemplative elements are frequently Wordsworthian in both content and vocabulary. So in *Pastorals*:

A valley sweeping to the West,  
With all its wealth of loveliness,  
Is more than recompense for days  
That taught us to endure.

In *The Flower of the Ruins* he uses nature openly for moral purposes, and, re-echoing the thought of Wordsworth's *Ode to Duty*, insists on the necessity for discipline and a consciousness of duty in the Universe. Up to 1851 he has no original thought to add, and the merit of the poems lies rather in their keen description than in their contemplative elements. His developing originality of approach comes through in *South-West Wind in the Woodland*. Of all nature poets Meredith, next to Shelley, was conscious of wind and sky and of their close union with earth: he feels the wind not as Shelley did as a chastener, but as an invigorating experience. His poetic method is widely removed from that of the romantic poets. The poem has a strange, formal effect, as if the poet were returning quite naturally to the classical tradition of Gray. Nature throughout is described in the terms of art:

Æolian silence charms the woods ;  
 Each tree a harp, whose foliaged strings  
 Are waiting for the master's touch.

The wind loosens 'all his roaring robes'; the boughs have 'their prophet harmony of leaves'; the oak has an 'organ harmony' which amid its upper foliage 'sounds, a symphony of distant seas'. The growth of the wind is like the growth of a crescendo in music. This imagery is one of Meredith's chief poetic achievements in the volume; its appeal is intellectual rather than sensuous, but the intellect is made a gateway to the imagination. The conclusion is contemplative, the suggestion that the mystery of the wind gives a deeper insight into life than 'hours of musing' in the lore of men. It is possible that this thought derives from Wordsworthian memories, and yet Meredith must have re-valued the experience, for, in 1862, in *Ode to the Spirit of Earth in Autumn*, he returned to this scene, of 'the wind-swept world' and added elements of his own philosophical thought.

Within these nature poems can be found the awakening of the more individual elements found later in his poetry, but the 1851 volume has many other types of verse. He began here the construction of narrative poems and dramatic monologues on classical themes, a type of verse which Tennyson had made popular in *Ænone* and *Ulysses*. Meredith seems to have thought well of his classical pieces, which included *The Shipwreck of Idomeneus* in blank verse, *Antigone* an irregular rhyming scheme on the basis of the decasyllabic line, and *Daphne* in the *Locksley Hall* metre. He continued this refurbishing of classical legend throughout his poetical career. Frequently he adds little to the myth, and even reveals that in poetry his quick-glancing mind could not easily be controlled to regular narrative developments. He was approaching most closely here to one of the traditions of Victorian poetry, but seldom, except in *Phoebus with Admetus*, did he make it peculiarly his own.

The other poems in this volume, apart from a series of epigrams on the poetry of writers from Chaucer to Keats, may be considered as an overflow from Meredith's periodical writing: generically it is his *Household Words* poetry. These simple ballads and incidents, such as *London by Lamplight* and *The*

*Sleeping City*, show how intelligible his verse can be when he is not under the stress of conveying his more intimate and original thought. One poem in this unambitious tradition contains suggestions of his later thought ; in *The Olive Branch* he outlines the possibility of social and material prosperity derived from scientific knowledge, which Tennyson had voiced with such confidence in *Locksley Hall*. Later he detaches himself from this enthusiasm for material progress, and sees that the prime necessity of man lies in moral and spiritual development. English taste in poetry, dominated by the mature work of Tennyson and Browning, passed the volume by, just as it had passed a year before the first poetry of the Pre-Raphaelites in *The Germ*. Yet here was the first volume of the poet whose work contributed fresh elements to the poetry of the century.

Meredith waited over a decade before he published his second volume, and then, when the tragedy of his first marriage had been finally played out, he issued, in 1862, *Modern Love and Other Poems*. A cold reception greeted his second volume, with apathy accompanied in some quarters by attack. *The Spectator* even defined him as 'a clever man, without literary genius, taste or judgment', a criticism which called out Swinburne's genial championship of him as 'one of the masters of English literature'. It is not strange that Meredith waited more than twenty years before he issued another volume of verse. The main feature of this second volume was the sequence *Modern Love*, in poems of sixteen lines which have a sonnet effect. The range of Meredith as a poet can perhaps best be gauged when it is remembered that he never wrote again in the manner which here he affects with such mastery, and that there is no poem in the century which attempts this same psychological analysis of sentiment in imaginative form. Nowhere is Meredith's detachment from the work of the Pre-Raphaelites more clearly seen. For them the pursuit of Eros had elevated itself into mystical passion, to be pursued in the dim and lovely intricacy of *The House of Life*. Meredith's setting for the analysis of love is realistic and modern, and his purpose is to discover every mood in the lover from pettiness and jealousy to passion. Equally he removes himself from Tennyson and the moral background of the *Idylls*. In the early

sixties he has stepped outside Victorianism into the modern world.

It is inevitable that the crisis of his own first marriage should form the background, though it cannot be asserted to what extent the portraits are biographical. The sequence unfolds a story which is as vivid as anything in Meredith's novels. The narrative movement is not obvious, so its main development may be summarized. A wife hushes her weeping at night as she realizes that the husband, who lies beside her, is awake and listening. No word is spoken but distrust arises. The man, estranged from her, notes her added beauty as she meets her lover, and is disgusted that he is aroused by these fresh charms. His moods are intricate; anger is exchanged for compassion when he realizes that she too is suffering. Philosophy brings no consolation, nor the memory of what he hoped love might be, and in a weaker mood he seeks consolation in a 'golden-haired' lady, a relic of his past. Such is the intricacy of love that the wife, though conscious of her own unfaithfulness, is aroused to jealousy. Life demands that, despite this discord, the show of married love shall continue, and an attempt to maintain these appearances leads to situations of tragic irony. The husband discovers but little consolation in his old love; the wife is tortured in her new passion, and they are drawn together in their unhappiness and in a mood of self-consolation seek to be reconciled. But what can pity fulfil when it is a substitute for love? The old complications return, a tangle of jealousy and bitter memories that only resolves itself in tragedy. And so the wife seeks death as a solution, and the husband stands over her body, the tortured image of their disaster.

Each poem is made an emotional crisis in these two lives. An incident is first realistically presented, and then its implications are explored in an imagery of rich and involved associations. It is in this mixture of commonplace externals with a resultant, far-reaching, passionate intricacy of mood that the individual quality of the poems lies. So, for instance, as guests at a Christmas country-house party, husband and wife are shown to 'an attic crib'; in their estrangement the situation is ironic, and the poem has a simple description of their solution:

I enter, and lie couched upon the floor.  
Passing, I caught the coverlet's quick beat.

But the emotional residuum of the situation is far from simple, and very different is the poetry in which it is imaged :

Come, Shame, burn to my soul ! and Pride and Pain—  
Foul demons that have tortured me, enchain !  
Out in the freezing darkness the lambs bleat.  
The small bird stiffens in the low starlight.

Elaborate quotation could alone reveal the wealth of circumstantial detail which gives these poems their basis in actuality, or the keen, resourceful imagery by which their moods are explored. Imagery mingles frequently with statuesque symbolism, as in the first poem, when the wife has ceased her sobbing once she knows that her husband lies awake and listening. The situation is first stated in its simplicity, but a majestic symbolism follows so that the fact already stated looms reflected upon a gigantesque shadow background which emphasizes the tragedy of the human scene and imbues it with unearthly grandeur :

Then, as midnight makes  
Her giant heart of Memory and Tears  
Drink the pale drug of silence, and so beat  
Sleep's heavy measure, they from head to feet  
Were moveless, looking through their dead black years,  
By vain regret scrawled over the blank wall.

Meredith's achievement as a poet can be most easily remembered from this sequence. Later his work becomes more esoteric, and the technical involutions already apparent grow more complex. In *Modern Love* he established a poetic portrayal of a phase of modern consciousness : the invention is admirable ; its contriving is masterly.

A number of the shorter poems published in the 1862 volume had already seen periodical publication. They include some simple dramatic poems, such as *Juggling Jerry*, *The Beggar's Soliloquy*, *The Old Chartist*, *Grandfather Bridgeman*. These sketches in humour and pathos, developed through clearly imagined characters, seem the poems of a novelist who is



awakening to dramatic sympathy. Technically the most marked intrusion is a close imitation of Browning's manner of allusiveness and abruptness. This influence, which is a temporary one, may have given Meredith the lead among his philosophical preoccupations to that peculiar and personal obscurity which almost disintegrates his later poetry.

One poem in this volume, *Ode to the Spirit of Earth in Autumn*, initiates the philosophical nature poetry which is the most individual element of his later work. He re-works in the *Ode*, the mood of *South-West Wind in the Woodland*, as if he had only now become aware of its full philosophical implication. The thought which gains first adequate expression here is elaborated in *The Lark Ascending* (1881), *The Woods of Westminster* (1883), *Earth and Man* (1883), *A Faith on Trial* (1888), *Hymn to Colour* (1888), *Ode to the Comic Spirit* (1892), *The Empty Purse* (1892), and *The Test of Manhood* (1901). He develops within these and other poems an attitude to experience which has almost the consistency of a formal philosophy. He sets out to rediscover a personal faith, and a faith for humanity, postulating the truth of the evolutionary origins of life. As thought, apart from all considerations of a poetical expression of thought, the poems have importance in the mental history of the century, and it has therefore been thought best to summarize Meredith's position as found in these later poems, and then to consider the technical problems which the poetic expression of philosophy has created.

Meredith pictures Earth first as a primeval mass 'of mud' <sup>4</sup> with the power of giving birth to living organisms. The life of animals and the life of man derive equally from the Mother that is Earth, and consequently man has no right to claim a title to a special creation. Man's weakness lies in the shame he feels in this kinship with Earth and his quest of a God in the Heavens away from Earth: 'Now to the Invisible he raves.' <sup>5</sup> To ignore Earth is to deny the meaning of life; to follow Earth is to develop in fullness. Earth has prescribed the method by which all life shall progress, a method of struggle between types, and a survival of the fittest type. This is Earth's 'cherishing of her best endow'd'. To recognize this purpose of selection and development in Earth is to achieve fullness in life:

She winnows, winnows roughly ; sifts,  
To dip her chosen in her source :  
Contention is the vital force,  
Whence pluck they brain, her prize of gifts.<sup>6</sup>

The sentimentalist and the ' totter-knee'd ' fail to distinguish this purpose and seek kindness and indulgence.<sup>7</sup> Further, man, unable to concentrate upon development in contact with Earth, seeks to know the meaning of the whole of life, the Whence and Whither.<sup>8</sup> Such a craving for personal contact with all-knowledge is philosophical sensuality.<sup>9</sup> Behind Earth there lies some Lord of Earth, but man, a cross of brute and spirit nourished by Earth, can only gain contact with this reality by the disciplined life that Earth exacts.<sup>10</sup> All knowledge comes from Earth : ' Earth that gives the milk, the spirit gives.' <sup>11</sup> The other faiths which man constructs are symbols disguising his fear of life and death. Earth gives man no final answer to the problem of immortality ; her purposes extend beyond the individual life. The degree to which man extends Earth's purposes to a future generation is in itself one immortal fulfilment,<sup>12</sup> though Earth, while demanding Faith and gathering and re-gathering so much back into herself, suggests that there are elements which endure.

Meredith then proceeds to outline the conduct that Earth demands of man. Man's delusion has been to regard himself as a different creation from the rest of life, but human life begins with its ' pasture amid the beasts '. Man beginning with an animal origin has by Earth's selection, and by his contact with her, developed a larger, more complex nature, which is a trinity of ' Blood ', and ' Heart ', and ' Brain '.<sup>13</sup> Man's danger is to allow any one of these elements to dominate and so prevent the purposes of his development in Earth. Blood alone is sensuality, the memory of the beast. Frequently Blood exhorts Heart or Sentiment to give a decorative cloak to animal lust. In such a combination Egoism, the degenerating atavism of man, flourishes, frustrating Earth's purposes. Sentimentalism is its expression, and it is to this aspect of humanity's frailty that Meredith directs his main attention in the novels. Brain alone is arid, but brain in contact with Heart and Blood can discipline man to a state of the Earthly normality, which Meredith names Common-Sense.<sup>14</sup> Earth

uses two weapons in urging man's development ; by Change, ' the strongest son of life ', she fights egoism, and by the Spirit of Comedy she displays man's foibles, mirroring his deviations from her standard of Common-Sense : ' With laughter she pierces the brute.' This progress in man is not a mechanical or inevitable development. History is full of the ' slip in relapse '.

Meredith proceeds to describe in greater detail the nature of this State of Reality or Common-Sense at which man should aim. Love under the discipline of Common-Sense is neither a habit nor a lust but an element in which Beauty and Brain and Reason enter and from which Pain and Fear depart. Nature demands generation, but she yields to man her richest experience in the accomplishment of her necessity. This theme of Love's relationship to Earth Meredith elaborates in *With the Persuader* (1901) and in *The Test of Manhood* (1901). Similarly, in *The Empty Purse* (1892) he outlines the social and economic application of the doctrine of Common-Sense. Meredith, in the poems to which reference has been given, elaborates a more logical system of thought than any poet of the period. This system permeates into other poems not primarily philosophical, and it is found suggestively in some of the later classical pieces, such as *Phoebus with Admetus* (1880) and *The Teaching of the Nude* (1892). Meredith's faith as outlined in his poems is incomplete. He would seem to admit that teleological conceptions are beyond human intelligence. Even the fate of the individual after death, that search for eternal tenancies, which had preoccupied so much of early Victorian poetry, he sets aside. Occasionally, as in *A Faith on Trial*, he seems to suggest the possibility of personal immortality, yet for him the real problem lies elsewhere. He seeks only such elements of faith as are necessary for the construction of a moral life. He recognizes the history of biological development, and the motives that govern the struggle for life which nineteenth century scientific thought was expounding ; on this basis he constructs a principle of living, strenuous and yet optimistic. The main conception is original, and worked out from his own experience, though at times one can detect Carlyle's influence in his thoughts and in his epithets.

Meredith's poetry grew intricate in his endeavour to express

these new elements of thought. He develops a vocabulary, individual, unexplained, and often uncouth. 'Yaffles on a chuckle skim' <sup>15</sup> is his method of describing the laughing cry of the green wood-pecker. 'The Temple of the Toes' <sup>16</sup> is a dancing-hall. 'Heaven a place of winging tons', <sup>17</sup> is his description of the primeval cosmos. Such examples are not difficult in themselves: they suggest merely an individual approach to vocabulary, simple in its elements but fanciful and involved in its effects. Such phrases are more difficult when Meredith is applying to them an unusual value arising from his own thought. Thus the two lines in *The Woods of Westermain* :

Straightway venom winecups shout  
Toasts to One whose eyes are out.

Not immediately may the uninitiated reader perceive that the second line constitutes an image of Death. It is true that Meredith explained many of these more difficult images to G. M. Trevelyan, and these definitions are incorporated in the notes to the poems.<sup>18</sup> But poetry should be self-explanatory; an 'edification by the margin' is not part of the game. Combined with these difficulties of phrase are found almost every possible grammatical inversion. Beyond all these complexities lie Meredith's specialized philosophical vocabulary and his use of allegory. 'Heart', 'Brain', 'Blood', 'Common-Sense', 'Comedy', all represent newly-devised concepts, and their full meaning is only revealed when they are studied in relationship to his whole thought. His allegory are almost medieval in its arbitrary abruptness: *The Woods of Westermain* appears to have elements of a medieval Bestiary imaginatively applied to the necessities of nineteenth century thought. So in the passage descriptive of one of the dread animals in the Wood :

Heed that snare.  
Muffled by his cavern-cowl  
Squats the scaly Dragon-fowl,  
Who was lord ere light you drank,  
And lest blood of knightly rank  
Stream, let not your fair princess  
Stray: he holds the leagues in stress,  
Watches keenly there.

Without G. M. Trevelyan's kindly note that " ' The Dragon ' ", or " Dragon-fowl " is self, egoism ' the allegorical sense of the passage could not easily be gauged.

The value of Meredith's poetical method is difficult to estimate. Occasionally it seems to be a mere wantonness in words. As in the novels, he sometimes creates deliberately difficult passages, signposts to the dull-witted to proceed no farther, so in his poetry he appears to delight in verbal convolutions. Such an exercise in dexterity is intellectual revelry, a harlequinade of the mind. These metaphysical fancies account, however, for but a small part of Meredith's vocabulary : the real source of difficulty is more deep-rooted. He has related his spiritual affirmations to all that knowledge and experience have shown him of life, and demanded not unnaturally a fresh vocabulary for their poetic expression. Consequently the perplexing elements, once they have been unravelled, render a rich yield of thought which could not have been otherwise fashioned. They serve, too, to colour the philosophical poetry with an atmosphere not inappropriate to its content, a suggestion of quick energy, violent at times and explosive, but never inert. It is the poetical counterpart of the torrential eloquence of Carlyle. The melody of Tennyson's verse and Swinburne's poetic sensuousness do not enter here : sometimes Meredith seems, as does Hardy, to be in conscious revolt against them, as was Donne against the Petrarchans. His crabbed, hard effects have at their best a vigour that seems suggestive of a new poetic vitality.

The intricacy of the ' Earth ' poems is carried with declamatory emphasis into Meredith's *Odes in Contribution to the Song of French History* (1898). As a result these poems are the most difficult and least satisfying portion of his poetical achievement. Meredith's strong intellectual attachment to Germany had been emphasized by education, by Carlyle's influence, and by his philosophical attachments. In the decades after the Revolution of 1848 he had noted with approval Germany's development of civic virtues. Bismarck's policy of unifying Germany under Prussian leadership had aroused suspicions, but they had been quelled by his faith in the solidarity of the German people. To France he had always paid homage, as the home of the 1789 Revolution and as the patroness of

Reason, but she had sinned for him by her worship of the disruptive genius of Napoleon I and her submission to Napoleon III.

Meredith first approached this theme poetically in *France, An Ode* (1870). Sedan had been fought, the Germans were victorious : a republic had been established in Paris. Meredith resented such opinion in England as was uncompromisingly hostile to France and within the ode he pities a chastened and defeated nation, which yet he regards as the treasury of much that is valuable in the spiritual life of Europe. She was misled by Napoleon I and tricked by Napoleon III, but yet she is the inheritress of Reason, a people that speaks the language of Voltaire :

Inveterate of brain, well knows she why  
Strength failed her, faithful to himself the first :  
Her dream is done, and she can read the sky,  
And she can take into her heart the worst  
Calamity to drug the shameful thought  
Of days that made her as the man she served  
A name of terror, but a thing unnerved :  
Buying the trickster, by the trickster bought,  
She for dominion, he to patch a throne.

This early poem on France is much simpler than those which followed some twenty years later. It exploits somewhat generously an irregularity in verse form, and employs a brusque semi-abstract vocabulary ; yet if the verse is sometimes clamorous, the general movement of argument is not concealed. Of the three new poems added in 1898 two precede *France* in theme. *The Revolution* outlines France's contribution in 1789 to the development of the human spirit, while *Napoléon* depicts her captured by the false glamour of one whose mind was ' cannon's cave ' :

Cannon his name,  
Cannon his voice, he came.  
Who heard of him heard shaken hills,  
An earth at quake, to quiet stamped.

The final poem, *Alsace-Lorraine*, gives Meredith's impression of France's recovery by 1898 from the calamity of 1870. He suggests that her saint should be Joan of Arc, ' She had no self but France ', and not Napoleon I, who had ' no France

but self'. He is confident that France will make her own contribution to Europe, and that instead of seeking to recapture the lost provinces, she will aid the development of a warless Europe :

On France is laid the proud initiative  
Of sacrifice in one self-mastering hour.

Meredith's politics, despite their concluding optimism, have a sense of realism to which Swinburne's seldom attained. In the later odes, however, poetic expression is enmeshed in verbal intricacies. It is as if Meredith had stolen the hurricane rhetoric of Carlyle and, robbing it of explanatory detail, had substituted an allusive and symbolic vocabulary borrowed largely from his own theory of Earth. It is true that he explained to G. M. Trevelyan what the verses meant, but one suspects that he must have known how they would confuse the general reader. The most effective of the poems is *Napoléon*, a character by whom Meredith, despite his antagonism, is fascinated. Yet even in the simpler passages in this poem, where the subject-matter is simply the description of Napoleon, the style struggles to conceal the meaning :

Incarnate Victory, Power manifest,  
Infernal or God-given to mankind,  
On the quenched volcano's cusp did he take stand,  
A conquering army's height above the land,  
Which calls that army offspring of its breast,  
And sees it mid the starry camps enshrined ;  
His eye the cannon's flame,  
The cannon's cave his mind.

The difficulty of this later poetry need not disguise Meredith's important contribution to the poetry of the century. In *Love in the Valley* he had written a lyric which yields its meaning as easily as a tune its melody ; in *Modern Love* he had applied verse to nervous, tangled modern moods ; and in the ' Earth ' poems he had won expression for his own attitude to life, an individual philosophy arising out of the Victorian problems of knowledge and faith. The ' Earth ' poems which led him to exploit a new vocabulary beguiled him finally into mannerism ; it was as if he were uttering a secret language in the belief that it was a universal speech. At its best, even if it is a secret

language, it contains a body of thought and intuitions that are worth unravelling.

1. *George Meredith*, etc., C. Photiades (1910); *George Meredith*, S. M. Ellis (1919, and a modified edition 1920); *G. Meredith: les cinquantes premières années* (Paris), R. Galland (1923); also studies by Lucien Wolff (Paris, 1924); W. Chislett (Boston, 1925); J. B. Priestley (1926); J. H. E. Crees (1928); and R. E. Sencourt (1929). See also *The Letters of George Meredith*, edited by William Maxse Meredith (1912). The standard critical work is *The Poetry and Philosophy of George Meredith*, G. M. Trevelyan (1920), amplified in his notes to *Poetical Works* (1912). Meredith has received excellent attention from the bibliographers, who have listed both his works and the contemporary criticism of them; an attempt was made in Richard Le Gallienne's *G. Meredith, Some Characteristics* (1890); there followed Arundell Esdaile's bibliography (1907), and M. B. Forman's (1922).

2. See *Der Einfluss Goethes auf George Meredith*, M. Krusemeyer; *Englische Studien*, LIX (1925); *Wilhelm Meister and his English Kinsmen*, Susanne Howe (1930).

3. Four of these are reprinted by R. Galland, *Meredith et l'Allemagne, Revue de Littérature Comparée*, III (1923), p. 463.

4. *The Woods of Westermmain.*
5. *Earth and Man.*
6. *Hard Weather.*
7. *Whimper of Sympathy.*
8. *The Question of Whither.*
9. *A Faith on Trial.*
10. *Hymn to Colour.*
11. *Earth's Secret.*
12. *The Empty Purse.*
13. *Ode to the Comic Spirit.*
14. Loc. cit. in 13.
15. *The Woods of Westermmain.*
16. *Phantasy.*
17. Loc. cit. in 15.
18. Loc. cit. in 1.



CHAPTER VIII  
THOMAS HARDY

THE changed purposes in later nineteenth century poetry reveal themselves in the work of Thomas Hardy (1840-1928).<sup>1</sup> Born at Higher Bockhampton in the parish of Stinsford, Dorset, he came of a family which had been associated with the West counties since Elizabethan times. His father was a small farm-holder and builder, and the boy grew up in a county into which industry had not penetrated and where mass education had not affected the varied, old-fashioned manners of life. As a child he was delicate, but so interested in books that even as a village schoolboy he discovered Dryden and Johnson and enjoyed them. Also he unearthed an old periodical which portrayed the Napoleonic wars, and so made his first contact with the theme which he was to use in *The Trumpet Major* and *The Dynasts*. When later he was sent to a Dorchester day-school he showed an interest in Latin and had the good luck to find a master who was anxious to teach him. Largely through the encouragement of his mother he added lessons in French and German to his ordinary studies. At sixteen he was apprenticed to an architect in Dorchester, but he found time to study Greek, and to continue with quiet persistence his reading in other languages. He remained in Dorchester for six years, the most formative period of his life. The experience he gathered was unusual, and the background unlike that of any other contemporary man of letters. Without a university education he had found the humanities, and their form without their pedantry entered later into his creative work. He saw the new England of railways and mechanized life beginning to affect the country town of Dorchester, but he saw also the old life, the fairs, and dances, where with a fiddle under his arm he was a welcome figure.

In 1862 he came to London to continue his architectural studies, and from 1863 he began to write with some consistency. Most of his early work was in verse, though his first published piece was a prose essay in *Chambers's Journal* (1865), *How I*

*Built Myself a House.* His life in London was desultory, and without literary companionship he pursued his reading and formed plans for writing which were never fulfilled. Some of the earliest pieces printed in his later volumes date from this period. It was in 1867, when a request for a church-restorer recalled him to Dorchester, that the impulse to write first found generous relief. He wrote a prose fiction, *The Poor Man and the Lady*; John Morley and Meredith both read it in their capacity as publishers' readers and advised Hardy on its inadequacies. Attempting to adjust himself to contemporary needs he completed by 1870 a second novel, *Desperate Remedies* (1871). So at the age of thirty literature began to supersede architecture as a profession. It was not an easy road, but the man, dark, thick-bearded, with alert and kindly eyes, as he appears in the portraits of those years, had adequate resources to meet the game that was on foot. For twenty-seven years his main occupation was prose fiction, and in that period he completed seventeen volumes, short stories and novels, which gave him a notable and permanent position in the history of the English novel.

After 1897, the year in which *The Well-Beloved* was published, and a year after *Jude the Obscure* had aroused a storm of criticism, he resolved to publish nothing but poetry. Throughout the period of prose he had not been inattentive to verse, and one finds a remarkable unity of tradition between his early poems in the mid-sixties and the last verses written in the third decade of the twentieth century. Hardy's short poems were issued in a number of volumes: *Wessex Poems and other Verses* (1898); *Poems of the Past and the Present* (1902); *Time's Laughingstocks and other Verses* (1909); *Satires of Circumstance, Lyrics and Reveries* (1914); *Moments of Vision* (1917); *Late Lyrics and Earlier with many other Verses* (1922); *Human Shows, Far Phantasies, Songs and Trifles* (1925); *Winter Words in Various Moods and Metres* (1928). Apart from these he issued his epic-drama *The Dynasts* in three parts (1903, 1906, 1908), and in 1923, *The Famous Tragedy of the Queen of Cornwall* a play arranged for mummers. The volume publication frequently bears little relationship to the chronological order of composition, though Hardy often clarifies matters by adding the date of composition at the end of a poem.

The earliest of his published lyrics were written in the days of *Enoch Arden*, *Atalanta in Calydon*, and *The Prince's Progress*; the last verses appeared amid the experimental work of post-war lyrists. It is difficult to find the mark of any contemporary influence on his work, though he would have willingly admitted that he had been influenced in his metrical experiments and ballad pieces by William Barnes (1801-1886), the Dorset dialect poet, a selection of whose verse he edited. Nor can any marked change of poetical purpose be discovered throughout the whole range of his work; skill increases as the poet grows older, but there is consistency of vision. Hardy is so seldom subjective that it is unusually difficult to trace his personal development. A few of the very early poems, such as *Amabel* ('*Can there indwell, My Amabel?*'), have the movement of Tennyson's early lyrics, while in later work he imitated French forms. The Boer War enters into a number of dramatic and contemplative poems in *Poems of the Past and the Present*, while in the same volume *Poems of Pilgrimage* arise out of his Italian journey of 1887. In *Late Lyrics and Earlier*, he remembers the European War (1914-1918) and the troubled days that followed it. All these instances are exceptional, for while aware of his age, his poetical experience arises not from topical incident but from timeless moments of human passion and conflict.

Hardy's departure from the poetical traditions of the century is apparent both in subject and form. Form affects his treatment of subject, and it is in form that his achievement is most difficult to assess. Many nineteenth century poets, Tennyson, and the Pre-Raphaelites, and equally lyrists of the nineties, had emphasized the importance not only of form, but of form that yielded rich melodious effects. Hardy seeks in poetry severity rather than delight. Without any open assault on the schools of romantic verse, and while preserving traditional verse patterns, he implies a distrust of rich verbal melodies. Frequently the significance in his poetry is transferred to matter in the prose sense of the word, and he appears deliberately to break up a stanza so that its musical effect may be afflicted. The following verse from *Old Furniture* is an example of what is a frequent practice in Hardy's work:

On this old viol, too, fingers are dancing—  
     As whilom—just over the strings by the nut,  
 The tip of a bow receding, advancing  
     In airy quivers, as if it would cut  
         The plaintive gut.

The same retention of the outward pattern of forms, accompanied by the apparently deliberate dissolution of rhythm and melody, can be seen in the following stanza from *The Woman I Met* :

‘ Why do you trouble me, dead woman,  
     Trouble me ;  
 You whom I knew when warm and human ?  
     —How it be  
 That you quitted earth and are yet upon it  
 Is, to any who ponder on it,  
     Past being read ! ’  
 ‘ Still, it is so,’ she said.

In well-marked contrast to such stanzas are the poems in which Hardy imitates the well-defined melody of the ballads.

Apart from his conscious withdrawal from harmony, there appear not infrequently passages when movement differs but little from that of prose. This effect can be seen in this first stanza of *At Madame Tussaud's in Victorian Years* :

That same first fiddler who leads the orchèstra to-night  
 Here fiddled four decades of years ago ;  
 He bears the same babe-like smile of self-centred delight,  
 Same trinket on watch-chain, same ring on the hand with the bow.

It is not merely that the lines, despite rhyme and a certain regularity of accentuation, have a prose movement, but that the poem as a whole has a diffused prose effect, lacking the resolution of scattered prosaic materials into a united poetic image. Hardy's life was spent mainly as a prose writer, and the prose writer at times intrudes even into his poetry. There are notable exceptions, but they serve to strengthen the main impression. In *Moments of Vision*, for instance, there occurs the lyric *Near Lanivet*, 1872, which is the most uniformly poetic of all his short poems. A tired woman leans for a moment against a ‘ stunted handpost ’, and her outstretched arms make her look ‘ in this dim-lit cease of day ’ like a woman

crucified. As an incident robbed of its poetical expression the poem might seem trivial, but the poetical transcription elevates it into a symbol of human suffering, a moment in experience whose associations are indefinitely various.

In vocabulary, too, Hardy is individual: he has re-valued words for himself, but his selection adds no sudden revelation of verbal beauty to his poetry. Strange words intrude significantly, but frequently with harshness. He has in store a considerable heap of words learned in his profession as architect and builder, and they are emptied sometimes a little indiscriminately into his poetry. His finest effects are often obtained through specialized knowledge, his intimacy with the Wessex country, its contours, and the habits of its men and women. But this specialized knowledge rests on a generous humanity, while the architectural vocabulary has the same incongruity as Browning's casual allusions to unfamiliar names and events. Words such as 'adze', 'cusp', 'ogee', though most of them have been used in poetry before, are employed by Hardy in a way that holds up the mind and disturbs appreciation. Apart from this architectural vocabulary one finds other groups of hard, unusual words in Hardy's poetry. Such words as 'lewth', 'leazes', 'dumble-dores', 'spuds', 'cit', 'wanzing', and many others. Some of these arise from an attempt based on his interest in William Barnes to introduce a dialect word into a poem whose basis is standard English; they re-affirm Hardy's belief that common words can settle into a poem without incongruity. Like Coleridge, he does not object to 'bucket' as a unit in his poetical vocabulary, but he is less careful than Coleridge in finding for such words their appropriate setting. Despite the occasional use of strange, unexpected words the basis of Hardy's poems is a simple vocabulary; poetic diction, in its more rhetorical and decorative phases, he consciously avoids. The total effect of his vocabulary is that of expressiveness and dignity without sensuous beauty. His vocabulary is, in one instance, impelled by the requirements of an experience that is new to poetry. He sees man frequently as a determinist sees him, the helpless plaything of forces outside himself. To express this view of the world poetically Hardy is forced to use words such as 'automaton', 'foresightlessness', 'mechanize', 'fantocine', 'artistries in Circumstance', 'junctive

law'. These words are not new in themselves, but their application to human life suggests new angles of vision. In thus separating himself in form, vocabulary, and thought from his contemporaries he gains contact with the metaphysical poets whose work, particularly that of Donne, he so much admired.<sup>2</sup>

In estimating the contents of Hardy's poetry it is difficult to forget his achievement in prose: he forces the recollection at times by giving lyrical expression to isolated incidents from the novels. His prose method relies upon the slow and architectonic manipulation of detail, until each fresh incident is seen with a richly associated background. This elevates even the sordid scenes in the novels, endowing them with the large vision associated with epic narration. Poetically it is only in *The Dynasts* that Hardy has achieved a similar effect. The short poems suggest the absence of these large qualities; with them the mean incident remains, despite vivid portrayal, a mean incident and nothing more. This effect is emphasized in that many of the poems are stark transcripts of human experience in moments when passion, or jealousy, or the irony of circumstance reflects unrelieved the grimness of life. So frequent are these poems that there arises from Hardy's poetry a permanent image of human frustration: a man and a woman are thrown together by the irony of circumstance and from their union arises a moment of passion which they call love, only to discover that its aftermath is a dreary record of semblance and deceit.<sup>3</sup> The mood varies but the theme is the same; in *In the Days of the Crinoline* the deception resolves itself into comedy, while in *The Duel* it results in tragic consequences; yet both are illustrations of human deceit. Hardy has justified this concentration on the drab motives of men and women in two ways. He asserts, in the preface to *Poems of the Past and the Present*, 'Unadjusted impressions have their value, and the road to a true philosophy of life seems to be in humbly recording diverse readings of its phenomena as they are forced upon us by chance and change'. This is an assertion that the poet must accept isolated appearances as they come into his consciousness, resting content that the aspects of life which he perceives are part of some unperceived unity. In the Apology prefaced to *Late Lyrics and Earlier* he states a second justification, more didactic in its intention: 'Let me repeat what

I printed in this relation more than twenty years ago, and wrote much earlier, in a poem entitled "In Tenebris":

If way to the Better there be, it exacts a full look at the Worst—

that is to say, by the exploration of reality and its frank recognition stage by stage along the survey, with an eye to the best consummation possible: briefly, evolutionary meliorism.' The explanation is intellectually permissible, while it does not serve to lift the cloud that overhangs this large section of his poetical work. Yet the true position of Hardy in these lyrics of human inadequacy can only be estimated historically. They are in part a protest against the idealization of love in the poetry surrounding him, from Browning's conception that love is the centre of successful human activity, to Rossetti's apotheosis of the earthly Eros. Read with these poems as a background Hardy's short lyrics, economical in phrase and pungent in the expression of their dark realism, recall the poetry of the century to moods in life which it had forgotten.

Hardy's poetry in the dramatic lyrics is not, however, confined to the depiction of the mere baseness of humanity. The perception of cruelty is strangely mingled with compassion, and from this union of pity and severity he derives his strongest poetic intuitions. It is as if he were some traveller to earth, who had explored human life and, finding it 'flat and unprofitable', had at the same time discovered that the fault lay in the necessity of outward events rather than with the human creatures themselves. So he turns from condemning the system to caress the human children in their weariness and to comfort them. His philosophy absolves his pity from sentimentality and his pity absolves his philosophy from cynical indifference. This mood of compassion colours and modifies many of his poems, more particularly those which approach ballad form; it lightens the gloom of *A Trampwoman's Tragedy*; it mingles with irony in *The Rival*.

The poems already discussed are those which reveal Hardy using poetic form for psychological exploration. They are, despite the limitations already suggested, the most notable element in his verse achievement. His patience in the analysis of human motive and his revelation of intricate moods of passion sustain interest, even when that interest is not poetic.

Next in importance to this psychological group are the poems which display a metaphysical bias. Hardy suggests that we should not extract from his portrayal of varying moods a metaphysical system, and label it as his own. He reaffirms this warning in uncompromising form in the preface to his last volume, *Winter Words*: 'I also repeat what I have often stated on such occasions, that no harmonious philosophy is attempted in these pages—or in any bygone pages of mine, for that matter.' Yet however cautiously we proceed it is impossible not to detect within a large number of verses a similarity of attitude, a permanent angle of vision colouring experience ever with the same shades of belief. The most persistent mood is a consciousness of the purposelessness of life, the irremediable disorder of the cosmos. Its keenest expression can be found in *Nature's Questioning*:

Has some Vast Imbecility,  
Mighty to build and blend,  
But impotent to tend,  
Framed us in jest, and left us now to hazardry ?

Or come we of an Automaton  
Unconscious of our pains ? . . .  
Or are we live remains  
Of Godhead dying downwards, brain and eye now gone ?

Such a mood is important not less for the thought it contains than in the degree to which the thought has been transferred into poetic reality. Professor Lascelles Abercrombie has commented judiciously on this poem, and on its contact with a conception of Hardy's metaphysic: 'The notion . . . is one of those inventions in artistic metaphysic which can do without, and even go against, the approval of reason, because they excite in us the sense of vague, notorious feeling finally reduced to vivid and unique form.'

Despite the general uniformity of these metaphysical poems they possess a variety of mood. *A Meeting with Despair* suggests a fleeting renunciation of his despair:

Then bitter self-reproaches as I stood  
I dealt me silently



As one perverse, misrepresenting Good  
In graceless mutiny.

Yet the whole intent of the poem is to emphasize that this self-reproach was momentary and unjustified. Very rarely there intrudes a mood of joy :

Let me enjoy the earth no less  
Because the all-enacting Might  
That fashioned forth its loveliness  
Had other aims than my delight.

Even here we are made to feel the impermanence of this forced elation. In *The Mother Mourns*, the Earth condemns the development of assertive, conscious thought in man. She prefers the days when he saw the sun as a 'Sanct shape' and the 'moon as the Night-Queen'; resignation rather than bitterness is the governing mood. Very different is *New Year's Eve*, a poem expressive of God's confessed purposelessness in relationship to his creation; here Hardy voices the bitter resentment of some trapped creature watching its tormentor. Examples could be multiplied to show that the mood and even the thought changes, but something deeper than these remains. It is as if creatures with different shapes came out of a fog and proclaimed separate identity for their varying forms, and we who watched confessed that the fog itself was far more important and impressive.

In certain poems, mainly later ones, Hardy gives infrequent expression to a more positive philosophy than can be found in any of the above pieces. A tentative persuasion, that 'evolutionary meliorism' may possibly effect progress, possesses him. It may be that this, too, is nothing more than a mood. If so, it is a mood which returns frequently into his consciousness, and gives him intuitions of a positive faith based on evolutionary conceptions. One of the keenest expressions of this attitude is in the poem *In a Museum* :

Here's the mould of a musical bird long passed from light,  
Which over the earth before man came was winging ;  
There's a contralto voice I heard last night,  
That lodges in me still with its sweet singing.

Such a dream is Time that the coo of this ancient bird  
Has perished not, but is blent, or will be blending  
Mid visionless wilds of space with the voice that I heard,  
In the full-fuged song of the universe unending.

When all Hardy's metaphysical poems have been gathered together the group still has less impressiveness than the simple, terse lyrics and ballads of human experience; yet in these philosophical poems he approaches that central debate of his century, the adjustment of the individual's life to that of the universe in the terms of faith. He has abandoned Christian cosmology: he sees the world as the scientists see it; he has embraced scepticism without that spiritual nostalgia for earlier faiths which saddens some of the Great Victorians. It is unnecessary to seek in Schopenhauer or elsewhere for the origins of his conceptions, for they possess neither finality nor close philosophic discipline. They are intuitions such as sensitive minds of the period must frequently have possessed. The sole difference is that Hardy found in these intuitions sources of suggestion for which he contrived to discover poetic language.

Hardy's poems on war form a convenient link between his short poems and *The Dynasts*. Three main groups of poems appear: verses on the Boer War and the European War (1914-1918) and ballads and poems on the Napoleonic War. The governing mood behind the two groups is different. Hardy sees clearly the pain and waste of modern warfare; he reviews it in terms of realism. The Napoleonic struggle, despite all recognition of distressing aspects, leaves a residuum of romance in his mind. *Poems of the Past and the Present* opens with an interesting collection of Boer War poems, but they are all poems from which the sense of glory and glamour has disappeared. He summarizes the mood of all these poems in a concluding lyric, *The Sick Battle-God*, in which he describes the gradual dethroning of Mars, the warlike spirit:

In days when men found joy in war,  
A God of Battles sped each mortal jar;  
The peoples pledged him heart and hand,  
From Israel's land to isles afar.

Yet wars arise, though zest grows cold ;  
 Wherefore, at times, as if in ancient mould  
 He looms, bepatched with paint and lath ;  
 But never hath he seemed the old !

Let men rejoice, let men deplore,  
 The lurid Deity of heretofore  
 Succumbs to one of saner nod ;  
 The Battle-god is god no more.

For the European War of 1914-1918 he speaks with greater emphasis. In the *Poems of War and Patriotism* he confesses a belief in the justice of England's cause (*England to Germany in 1914*), and appeals to America for Belgium (1914) ; but later he commemorates the personal and human aspects of war, the tragedy of the common man that lies deeper than the policies of the nations. He remembers in *The Pity of It* the common lineage of the English and German peoples and sets his curse on those who have put them asunder. His song in honour of the soldier was sung early (September 1914) and memorably :

What of the faith and fire within us  
 Men who march away  
 Ere the barn-cocks say  
 Night is growing gray,  
 Leaving all that here can win us ;  
 What of the faith and fire within us  
 Men who march away ?

Such is his tribute to humanity that goes bravely to war, but the ugliness and waste of the conflict remain longest in his mind. In *Then and Now* he considers the different forms of warfare, from the time of chivalry to the present day, and he sees honour and cleanliness dying out, to be replaced by unilluminated cruelty.

The Napoleonic struggle aroused him to very different verse. We have already seen how that story penetrated deeply into his mind : it was his boyhood reading ; out of it grew in prose *The Trumpet Major* and in verse *The Dynasts*. It is not strange that he should reflect on it frequently in his lyrical verse. In *The Alarm* he reminds us in the sub-title (*In memory of one of the writer's family who was a volunteer during the War with Napoleon*) that he had close, personal contacts with the struggle.

The ballad form dominates his treatment of the Napoleonic theme: typical of his method are, *Valenciennes*, *Leipzig*, *The Peasant's Confession*, *The Dance at the Phoenix*, *The Bridge of Lodi*, and *One We Knew*. It is not that he is blind to the cruelty of the Napoleonic Wars but that the incidents he records glow in his mind as they might in the reminiscences of some old soldier. Most of these poems are earlier than *The Dynasts*, and they serve to show his many associations with Napoleonic legend before his imagination realized fully the implications of Napoleon's career.

*The Dynasts*, which Hardy completed in September 1907, is one of the ambitious poetical achievements of the period. He transfers into it all that impressive accumulation of detail which is the distinguishing characteristic of his prose work. The imagination is conquered by a sense of mass, co-ordinated to make one coherent impression. The work conforms to no recognized literary form. Hardy himself describes it as 'an epic-drama of the war with Napoleon, in three parts, nineteen acts, and one hundred and thirty scenes'. This vast material is organized into several types of action. The main movement consists of human scenes expressed in dramatic blank verse, depicting crucial moments in the ten years that precede Waterloo. These are connected by prose scenes, mainly descriptive of large movements that cannot be dramatically portrayed. Further, colloquies of phantom spirits in the Overworld, expressed in strophic stanzas, occur at intervals in the drama. It is small wonder that Hardy felt that the piece was intended 'simply for mental performance'. The human scenes are those most closely parallel to the work of earlier writers. If they stood alone they would have the appearance of a pre-Elizabethan chronicle play. They have the same wealth of character and diffusion of scene as in the English Shakespearian chronicles, where the action seems too great for full emphasis on any individual character. Man is seen only in relationship to incident, and unity is sought in some abstract conception that summarizes the purport of the variegated movement of men and events. Yet from the complexity of action and character Hardy contrives to give a detailed presentation of Napoleon. The lyricism and the powerful gesture of the single line, which give Shakespearian blank verse so much

of its individuality, are absent. Examined passage by passage, the blank verse has a frequent flatness, and a severity that is almost drab, but the appropriateness of each speech and the dramatic rightness of the scenes give the whole a noble strength.

Hardy was not content to write a chronicle play. He sought devices which would give the work a more coherent structure and a philosophical bias. The prose 'Dumb-Shows' which frequently divide the human dramatic scenes have a more important influence here than has been usually allowed. They serve, obviously, to unite the human action, but, more than this, they give us the physical standpoint from which we are to view the whole. The following is a typical passage of the prose in the 'Dumb-Shows': 'A view of the country from mid-air, at a point south of the River Inn, which is seen as a silver thread, winding northward between its junction with the Salza and the Danube, and forming the boundaries of the two countries. The Danube shows itself as a crinkled satin riband, stretching from left to right in the far background of the picture, the Inn discharging its waters into the larger river. A vast Austrian army creeps dully along the mid-distance, in the form of detached masses and columns of a whitish cast. The columns insensibly draw nearer to each other, and are seen to be converging from the east upon the banks of the Inn aforesaid.' The scene is viewed from above, at a distance from the human participants, and the spectator is made thus to feel that the individuals are but the minute puppets in some cosmic movement. In this way the Dumb-Show prepares the reader for the spiritual values of the epic-drama and for the scenes in the Overworld.

The figures in the Overworld are described by Hardy in his preface as 'supernatural spectators of the terrestrial action, certain impersonated abstractions or Intelligences, called Spirits'. They are divided into two main groups. The Spirit of Pities 'approximates to the Universal Sympathy of human nature—the spectator idealized', and the cognate spirits, Ironic, Sinister, emphasize moods in which human experience may be viewed. The Spirit of the Years, in Hardy's own phrase, 'approximates to the passionless Insight of the Ages'. Not only do these spirits comment on the action, but they are allowed at times to assume human form and mingle with the

human scene. The Spirit of Rumour enters the House of a Lady of Quality in London and disturbs the company by his whispers ; Pitie's whispers admonitions into the ear of Napoleon as he is crowned King of Italy, while Pitie's and the Spirit of the Years, in the form of sea-birds, influence Villeneuve in the crucial hours of his life. It is in the Overworld discussions, however, that the Spirits make their main effect. Hardy suggests that they are a modern counterpart for epic machinery and that ' their doctrines are but tentative, and are advanced with little eye to a systematized philosophy warranted to lift " the burthen of the mystery " of this unintelligible world ' . Whatever may have been his initial purpose the Overworld does impose a closely defined interpretation upon the human action.

Such is the form of the work ; its strength lies in the variety of the human scenes, and the close grasp on dramatic appropriateness that Hardy retains throughout. We see passengers in a Wessex coach quarrelling over England's war policy ; Sheridan speaking in the Old House of Commons ; George III receiving Pitt amid the leisure of his Weymouth distractions ; Napoleon and Josephine ; the death of Sir John Moore ; the wooing of Maria Louisa ; and the little boy who can prove that ' Mr. Pitt killed Uncle John's parrot ' ; and so to the climax of Waterloo. Retaining closely the outline of historical fact, Hardy has wrought from the Napoleonic story its rich human and dramatic possibilities. Only once does he turn from the press of men in events to dwell caressingly with an individual. The death of Nelson so delays him and in consequence produces the drama's most lyrical passage of blank verse. Nelson, as he dies, has asked Hardy, the Wessex captain, what he is thinking of, and Hardy replies :

Thoughts all confused, my lord :—their needs on deck,  
Your own sad state, and your unrivalled past ;  
Mixed up with flashes of old things afar—  
Old childish things at home, down Wessex way,  
In the snug village under Blackdon Hill  
Where I was born. The tumbling stream, the garden,  
The placid look of the grey dial there  
Marking unconsciously this bloody hour,  
And the red apples on my father's trees,  
Just now full ripe.

It would seem that Hardy revenged upon himself this moment of excessive concern at Nelson's death, for later he makes Nelson's body the cause of one of the few grotesque scenes in the drama. An old boatman is made to recount how Nelson was brought home 'in a cask of sperrits. . . . But what happened was this. They were a long time coming, owing to contrary winds, and the Victory being little more than a wreck. And grog ran short, because they'd used near all they had to peckle his body in. So—they broached the Adm'l . . . the plain calendar of it is, that when he came to be unhooped, it was found that the crew had drunk him dry.' The scene is one of the strange, gothic elements in *The Dynasts*, an incident that only the Spirit Ironic can interpret.

When all comment on detail has been made, the vast impression of the whole work returns to capture the mind. The scientists have envisioned a larger cosmos since Milton wrote *Paradise Lost* and Hardy is alone among the modern poets in attempting to capture these illimitable elements into imaginative form. This panoramic show, 'a spectacle in the likeness of a drama' intended only for mental performance, rises in its unity to give an impression of strength which is absent from the single scenes considered in isolation. This quality gives to the work, apart from its novelty of form, a classical structure, an economy in the parts arising from their due subordination to a unity in design. The same architectonic control as gives to the novels their sombre strength pervades this epic-drama, though the canvas is here more extended. The underlying values are the same as those found in the novels, and in many of the short poems. They accumulate into a view of life, emotional and intuitive, without the logical clarity or argued consistency of a philosophy. Over human life there hangs a malignant destiny which leads all human endeavour to frustration and cruelty. In the midst of this calamity there remains a spectator piteous and deeply affected but impotent to assist. The intellect suggests at times that gradually this tragedy may be alleviated, but the suggestion is only momentary and finds no confirmation in events. It is with such a momentary relaxation into optimism that *The Dynasts* closes :

But—a stirring thrills the air  
 Like to sounds of joyance there  
 That the rages  
 Of the ages

Shall be cancelled, and deliverance offered from the darts that were,  
 Consciousness the Will informing, till It fashion all things fair !

Hardy's one other adventure into poetic drama is of a much more modest type. *The Famous Tragedy of the Queen of Cornwall* (1924) is his version of the Tristram and Iseult story 'arranged as a play for mummers'. His intention in this drama<sup>5</sup> was to preserve, as in classical drama, the unities and a Chorus, named The Chanters. He demands at the same time a licence to modify the legend. The resulting play is slight and unsatisfactory. He has completely perverted the values of the traditional Tristram and Iseult story and has had nothing to substitute for the loss of its grace and loveliness. His play ends by the king stabbing Tristram and Queen Iseult stabbing the king. The Queen rushes out and promises to commit suicide. Hardy, in reducing the legend, has made it a meaner thing, nor does his model of a mummer's play, despite his citation of classical parallels, allow for any adequate development of character or dramatic conflict. Having made the cosmos his stage in *The Dynasts*, he chose here to work with puppets, and the effect is not equally satisfying. The interest in the play can only remain an interest in experiment: it is elsewhere that one must look for his individual contribution to nineteenth-century poetry.

1. Biographical material is still (1932) limited. The official account is by Thomas Hardy's widow, *The Early Life* (1928), and *The Later Years* (1930); there are numerous critical studies, most of which deal with Hardy as a novelist; *The Art of Thomas Hardy* (1894) by Lionel Johnson, has, in the 1923 edition, a chapter on the poetry by J. E. Barton and a bibliography by John Lane; in *Thomas Hardy* (1912) Lascelles Abercrombie deals fully with the poetry up to that date; there are other studies by H. H. Child (1916); H. C. Duffin (1921); Arthur Symonds (1927), and by S. C. Chew (New York, 1928); for the bibliography see also *The Bibliography of Thomas Hardy (1865-1915)*, A. P. Webb (1916). Aspects of Hardy's work are considered also in *Thomas Hardy's Wessex*, Harman Lee (revised ed. 1925); *The Landscape of Thomas Hardy*, Donald Maxwell (1928); *Thomas Hardy*, A. S. MacDowall (1931).



2. See Arthur Symons, loc. cit. in 1.
3. See *Le couple humain dans l'œuvre de Thomas Hardy*, P. d'Exideuil (1928).
4. Loc. cit. in 1.
5. See the letter to H. H. Child, quoted, *The Later Years* (loc. cit. 1), p. 235.

## CHAPTER IX

### JAMES THOMSON

JAMES THOMSON (1834-1882),<sup>1</sup> popularly known as the poet of one poem, *The City of Dreadful Night*, presents a record of half-frustrated poetic expression, with moments of dark splendour, arising from a life dominated by misfortune. He was born at Port Glasgow in 1834. His mother died when he was six, and from her close evangelicalism he was later to revolt. His father was a sailor stricken with paralysis, and some of Thomson's unstable characteristics have been traced to his influence. Thomson was found sufficient schooling to qualify him for an army-schoolmastership, and from 1854-1862 he served in army schools in Ireland and England. Like Leopardi, who influenced his poetry, he loved unsuccessfully ; the one woman to whom he was deeply attached died in 1853, and in the most ambitious of his prose essays, *A Lady of Sorrow*, he has commemorated the attachment in language influenced by De Quincey. His years as a schoolmaster were the most untroubled in his life. He had worked to gain a knowledge of Italian, French, and German, and had read widely in English literature. It was then that poetry began, and as yet the poverty and self-inflicted distress of the later years had not mastered him. He was dismissed from his post in 1862 for a breach of discipline which appears to have been of a venial character. In his early days as a teacher he had met, at Cork, Charles Bradlaugh, the rationalist politician who carried his atheism so aggressively into English public life. His influence on Thomson was profound, and it was to Bradlaugh that he turned after his dismissal. Bradlaugh found him work on his paper, *The National Reformer*, and from 1862-1874 Thomson wrote regularly for the rationalist press. His satiric prose in such pieces as *The Story of a Famous Old Jewish Firm*,<sup>2</sup> has an assaulting power : the work that Swift might have produced had he been an atheist and not a Christian. Unfortunately his rationalist associations and his poverty barred him from the society and the literary journals where his poetical work might have found acceptance. His interests remained wide : the

initials 'B. V.' ('Bysshe Vanolis'), under which he wrote, showed his admiration for Shelley and Novalis, while his prose essays mark his retention of wide literary enthusiasm and discrimination.<sup>3</sup> Yet rationalist thought was definitely penetrating his outlook, and exercising a developing influence on his creative work. Apart from one visit to Colorado and another to Spain, a garret in London was the centre of the rest of his life, and the dim gas-lit streets of London appear frequently in his poetry. Melancholy possessed him with the strength of physical disease, and he grew into a habit of drinking which his will was powerless to control. It was towards the close of this period that *The City of Dreadful Night* appeared in *The National Reformer*, March-May 1874.

In 1875 Thomson quarrelled with Bradlaugh, and his association with *The National Reformer* ceased. He struggled to gain other journalism, and some of his work appeared in that most curious Victorian periodical *Cope's Tobacco Plant*, in which a Liverpool firm advertised its tobacco by printing reputable literature. These were temporary exploits, and Thomson's condition was frequently not far from destitution. He had the good fortune to gain the friendship of Bertram Dobell, bookseller and publisher, who arranged for the appearance of his first volume of verse, *The City of Dreadful Night and other Poems*, in 1880. The title poem had already gained the attention of George Eliot, Meredith and Philip Bourke Marston, and the volume was in every way successful. Later in the same year (1880) appeared a second volume, *Vane's Story, Weddah and Om-el-Bonain and other Poems*. Recognition had come at last, and had Thomson a settled health or temperate habits he could have developed the opening offered him in periodicals such as *The Fortnightly* and *The Cornhill*. But dipsomania possessed him, until even his friends found difficulty in associating with him. He died in 1882 in University College Hospital, where he had been taken by Philip Bourke Marston and other friends. After his death a third volume of verse, *A Voice from the Nile and other Poems* (1884), was published with a memoir by Bertram Dobell, and in 1895 the collected *Poetical Works* were issued.

Thomson's poetry was issued in volume form only in the last years of his life; some of it had been composed more than

twenty years before. The order of composition can be generally determined by the dates of periodical publication and by biographical information, and the development of Thomson's mind and creative power can be more clearly perceived once the poems are so arranged. The first period in his work dates from the middle fifties until his dismissal from the army-schoolmastership in 1862. He had not yet absorbed atheism as a creed: he stands as Arnold did in the 'valley of the shadow of hesitation'. An expression of this spiritual self-probing lies in *Suggested by Matthew Arnold's 'Stanzas from the Grande Chartreuse'* (1855); poetically the piece is flat, but it shows Thomson torn between the faith of his childhood and a belief that Christianity is

a mighty Creed outworn—  
Its spirit fading from the earth.

If *Suggested* is an attempt to express his early position intellectually, *A Recusant* (1858) forms, again under Arnold's influence, an emotional approach to the same dilemma:

The Church stands there beyond the orchard-blooms :  
How yearningly I gaze upon its spire !  
Lifted mysterious through the twilight glooms,  
Dissolving in the sunset's golden fire,  
Or dim as slender incense morn by morn  
Ascending to the blue and open sky.  
For ever when my heart feels most forlorn  
It murmurs to me with a weary sigh,  
How sweet to enter in, to kneel and pray  
With all the others whom we love so well !  
All disbelief and doubt might pass away,  
All peace float to us with its Sabbath bell.  
Conscience replies, There is but one good rest,  
Whose head is pillowed upon Truth's pure breast.

Apart from the poems which express this central approach to faith, he wrote within this period a number of lyrics, varied in mood, and frequently of distinct accomplishment. Among them is *Withered Leaves* (1857), an epitaph, possessing more technical virtuosity than he usually displays:

Let the roses lie, dear,  
Let them lie ;

They are all thrown by, dear,  
 All thrown by :  
 What should they do now but quickly die ?

One poem in this first period, *The Doom of a City* (1857), pre-shadows much in Thomson's later work. The poem opens with a voyage in a boat, which has suggestions of *Alastor*, to a city of stone people, a notion derived directly from *The Arabian Nights*.<sup>4</sup> These elements are harnessed somewhat incongruously to a Judgment scene followed finally by an account of the return voyage. Thomson was conscious that he had not succeeded in inducing unity upon his diverse thought and material; in a manuscript note he wrote, 'I call it a Fantasia, because (lacking the knowledge and power to deal with the theme in its epical integrity) I made it but an episode in a human life.'<sup>5</sup> This self-criticism must be accepted and it needs emphasis. His theme belongs distinctly to his earlier period; the recognition of a Providence has not been rejected and even a faith in human amelioration is expressed. Looseness of poetic form and unevenness of thought both detract from the merit of the piece, yet certain characteristics of his poetical work first appear here. One notices that, despite his failure in the work as a whole, he has scattered through its diverse parts brilliant single lines and short passages of descriptive strength. Such is the picture of a city of stone, and such is the following simile around which clings an element of personal pathos :

As one who in the morning-shine  
 Reels homeward, shameful, wan, adust,  
 From orgies wild with fiery wine  
 And reckless sin and brutish lust :  
 And sees a doorway open wide,  
 And then the grand Cathedral space ;  
 And hurries in to crouch and hide  
 His trembling frame, his branded face.

Yet he is capable of destroying his strongest passage by some gesture of crudity, that would have led the reviewers of the romantic period to dub him a 'cockney-atheist'. Apart from developing characteristics of style, the poem possesses the peculiar image which moves in and out of his later poetry and

dwells in *The City of Dreadful Night*: a single man alone in a city at night where darkness is broken only by the gas-lights and silence is not broken at all:

I paced through desert streets, beneath the gleam  
Of lamps that lit my trembling life alone.

So emerges the symbol in which Thomson endeavours to express imaginatively his spiritual loneliness and melancholy.

The second poetic period (1860-1874) is roughly contemporaneous with his employment by Bradlaugh on *The National Reformer* (1862-1874). Though this period culminates with *The City of Dreadful Night* much of the work within it is of a very different character. *Sunday at Hampstead* (1863) and *Sunday up the River* (1865) are poems of the cockney-worker at rest. The earlier piece has memories of Heine, a number of whose poems Thomson translated and whose influence on his work is marked. The holiday mood of the later piece is interrupted with historical discourses. Both poems have an individual atmosphere, the country near the gas-lit streets, the love-making of the worker at rest. The occasional cockneyisms merely help to define the frolic mood of the poems. The detachment of these poems from atheistical discourse is retained in *The Naked Goddess* (1866) and *Weddah and Om-el Bonain* (1868), two of his most secure poems, which suggest that he possessed elements of suppressed romanticism. *The Naked Goddess* is an allegory of pagan beauty transcending the sombre, furtive ways of priest and philosopher. In couplets of a mainly trochaic movement he has maintained his theme with even power; he has consolidated the elements of fable, satire, and description into one impressive whole. A larger work, no less adequately performed, is *Weddah and Om-el Bonain*. The story is expanded, in *ottava rima*, from a brief prose incident in Stendhal's *De l'Amour*, and shows an unusual control of narrative. It has the same range of ambition as Keats's *Isabella*; decorative elements enter without corrupting the development, and the memory left from the poem lies not merely in incident but in a piteous image of beauty's unfair struggle with power. Meredith's comment is memorable: ' (The poem) stands to witness what great things he would

have done in the exhibition of nobility at war with evil traditions.' These poems show clearly that Thomson had wider potentialities than his actual achievement might suggest. The dark melancholy that dwelt within him gradually reduced all promise of colour and variety to its own sombre mood.

Two poems emerge in these years, personal in character, and anticipatory of *The City of Dreadful Night: To Our Ladies of Death* (1861) and *Vane's Story* (1864). The earlier poem derives from De Quincey's *Suspiria de Profundis*, and resolves itself into verbal statuary, figuring Our Lady of Beatitudes, Our Lady of Annihilation, and Our Lady of Oblivion. In a stanza derived from Browning's *The Guardian Angel* he attains a classical restraint and dignity of expression. This breaks down at the close as a mood of personal suffering enters in, for with Thomson as emotion increases, poetic effectiveness declines. The poem marks his first full declaration of pessimism, the consciousness of *l'ultimo inganno della vita* which had led him to kinship with Leopardi:

Weary of living isolated life,  
 Weary of hoping hopes for ever vain,  
 Weary of struggling in all-sterile strife,  
 Weary of thought which maketh nothing plain,  
 I close my eyes and hush my panting breath,  
 And yearn for Thee, divinely tranquil Death,  
 To come and soothe away my bitter pain.

*Vane's Story* (1864), a more uneven work, has definitely autobiographical elements. The speaker, after a brief prologue in Skeltonics, narrates how he encounters the vision of his dead beloved. They speak together, he of his atheism and she of her simple, self-consoling faith. Abruptly the poem changes with the recital of Heine's *Ich bin die Prinzessin Ilse*. The lady ceases to be a vision, gains definite human qualities, and goes off with the speaker to a working men's ball. Here they meet Brown and Jones with their rough, enthusiastic pleasure-making, and so Vane's dream ends. The poem has marked defects, including this ill-contrived transition from fantasy to realism. Thomson, who knew Browning's work, had a model in *Christmas Eve and Easter Day* for the union of satire and discourse which he wished to convey. He failed to make use

of it, and his poem is marred with grossness and with sly, ogling lines. Thomson admits their presence, but excuses them with Heine's example :

Grossness here indeed is regnant,  
But it is the grossness pregnant ;  
Heine growled it, ending thus  
His wild *Book of Lazarus*.

Again the anti-Christian satire lacks dramatic appropriateness ; the journalist belabouring his opponents has intruded, as in the lines on the creation :

He cursed  
The work He thought so good at first ;  
And surely Earth and Heaven evince  
That He has done but little since.

Despite these inequalities, the poem possesses autobiographical interest, and isolated images and passages have the excellence frequently found as a partially compensating element in Thomson's uneven, introspective poems. The terror with which he recognizes the necessity of accepting this misshapen life is expressed in lines reminiscent of Blake :

As well a thorn might pray to be  
Transformed into an olive-tree ;  
As well a weevil might determine  
To grow a farmer hating vermin.

He portrays how in his own life the earlier happiness has been overshadowed ; melancholia and mental isolation are poisoning him :

The stream fell stagnant, and was soon  
A bloated marsh, a pest-lagoon ;  
The sweet flowers died, the noble trees  
Turned black and gaunt anatomies ;  
The birds all left the saddened air  
To seek some other home as fair.

From 1870-1874 Thomson was engaged on *The City of Dreadful Night*. In other poems he is more secure, but here more creative, and a strange, distinctive world emerges, a



symbol of Despair fashioned only for those who know its 'dolorous mysteries'. Thomson confesses that life is a tortured Death-in-Life (the phrase itself he derived from Heine's *Confessions*) and poetry may give

some sense of power and passion  
In helpless impotence to try to fashion  
Our woe in living words howe'er uncouth.

The poem opens with a geographical description of the City, curiously detailed, as if a metaphysical poet had written it, but impressive with glimpses of waste marshes that shine and glisten in the moon. A succession of pictures follows, not closely connected, but all displaying scenes in the dread life of the City. These are expressed in varying verse forms, and set alternately with them are passages in a seven-line stanza showing the progress of the speaker. Thomson evokes images of sombre power to present the grim pageantry: a weary figure shows life void of meaning as a watch without hands or marks on the dial-face; another appears tortured by his loss of the woman who could have given him hope; some of the inhabitants of the dread City attempt to escape to Hell and find that the citizens of the Dreadful City are 'shut alike from Heaven and Earth and Hell'. He emphasizes this mood of despair by his portrayal of the Mansion of love that is frustrated, the voice of a preacher, the River of the Suicides, the sphinx amid shattered statuary, and, as a culminating episode, a verbal rendering of Albrecht Dürer's 'Melencolia'. Behind these scenes are the recurrent impressions of the speaker, stifled and lonely, moving in silence through the gloom of the gas-lit streets:

Although lamps burn along the silent streets;  
Even when moonlight silvers silent squares  
The dark holds countless lanes and close retreats;  
But when the night its sphereless mantle wears  
The open spaces yawn with gloom abysmal,  
The sombre mansions loom immense and dismal,  
The lanes are black as subterranean lairs.

The mood of despair penetrates deeper than the spiritual nostalgia of the romantics or the prayer for life's cessation of

Swinburne's *The Garden of Proserpine*. Life is here an aching and inescapable futility like the maddening wakefulness of insomnia. The strength of the poem lies in the imaginative quality that has sustained these dark phantoms without monotony; and it increases in the later sections, so that the fallen statuary and the transcript of Dürer's 'Melencolia' and the description of the sphinx are among the most marked and individual passages in the whole of Thomson's work. Despite unevenness he has poetic integrity, and not infrequently poetic power. His contacts lay closely with the earlier nineteenth century discussion of faith and disbelief. He carries on that theme where Arnold left it, in self-frustrating doubt. He penetrates farther than Arnold and arouses from his scepticism an image of despair.

1. *James Thomson*, H. S. Salt (1889); *James Thomson*, B. Dobell (1910); *James Thomson: sein Leben und seine Werke*, J. Weissel; *Weiner Beiträge zur englischen Philologie*, Bd. 24 (1906). A critical estimate is provided by Edmund Blunden as an introduction to *The City of Dreadful Night*, etc. (1932).

2. *Satires and Profanities* (1884).

3. *Essays and Phantasies* (1881); *Biographical and Critical Essays* (1896).

4. The Tale of Zobeide in *The Three Calendars*. Thomson notes the source (*Collected Works*, II, p. 443).

5. *Collected Works*, II, p. 442.

## CHAPTER X

ROBERT BRIDGES AND HIS ASSOCIATES: CANON DIXON; MARY COLERIDGE; GERARD MANLEY HOPKINS; DIGBY MACKWORTH DOLBEN; ROBERT BRIDGES

A NUMBER of poets in the later nineteenth century are closely associated with Robert Bridges: he knew them personally and championed them, sometimes with excessive zeal. Further, they all possessed an interest in the poetical expression of religious experience, which brings them into contact with some of the motives of Bridges's own work. The earliest, Canon Dixon, had been a member with William Morris of a group that was intimately connected with the Pre-Raphaelites. Later he removed himself from that allegiance, and his poetry, like that of Bridges and of the other writers in this chapter, is marked frequently with a conscious reaction from Pre-Raphaelite methods and motives. More notable than Bridges's praise of Dixon is his support of D. M. Dolben and of Gerard Manley Hopkins. Probably neither of these poets would have been known had not Bridges introduced them with discreet memoirs to the public.

Digby Mackworth Dolben (1848-1868), though he lacks the force and genius of Hopkins, yet showed an early, almost precocious, talent in verse. Bridges, who knew him at Eton and was related to him, has published his poems and portrayed his brief life in a memoir (1911). He presents him as a keenly emotional nature, one who could be aroused to passionate attachments, whether for friends, or religion, or verse. His life from his adolescence onwards was dominated by religious enthusiasms. Though he did not actually enter the Roman Church, his thought from his Eton days onwards was continually turned towards that direction. In his poetry he seems conscious not only of religion and the cloister but of the beauties over which Apollo presides. So in the dramatic monologue *From the Cloister*, Brother Jerome speaks:

O sunny Athens, home of life and love,  
Free joyous life that I may never live,

Warm glowing love that I may never know,—  
Home of Apollo, god of poetry.

This conflicting attraction of pagan Greece and Christian Rome he never completely resolved. Possibly had he lived to more mature years he might have come to produce very different work, but in the record that remains religious poetry stands out as the strongest element. He captures some fragrance of Christian medievalism, and sometimes, as in *Homo Factus Est*, deliberately imitates a medieval hymn :

Come to me, Belovèd,  
Babe of Bethlehem ;  
Lay aside Thy Sceptre  
And Thy Diadem.

Bridges speaks cautiously of Dolben's talent, possibly too cautiously, for despite his championship they belonged to different schools. Bridges had a strong classical rectitude in his work, while Dolben, even in his religious verse, is thrusting out excessively towards romantic effects. This Bridges himself realized : ' Our instinctive attitudes towards poetry were very dissimilar, he regarded it from the emotional, and I from the artistic side.' Yet Bridges makes it clear that he saw in Dolben a potentially rich talent that might, had it developed, have made an important contribution to later nineteenth century poetry.

Richard Watson Dixon <sup>1</sup> (1833-1900) was in the group of undergraduates who were associated with Morris and Burne-Jones in the days of the ' Brotherhood ' at Oxford. Most of those young men were destined for the Church : Dixon alone fulfilled that destiny. He held many offices, though he never gained the preferment which his friends thought he deserved. He wrote an elaborate *History of the Church of England*, the main literary accomplishment of his life. Poetry was a fitful occupation. His verse was issued as, *Christ's Company* (1861) ; *St. John in Patmos* (1863) ; *Historical Odes* (1864) ; *Mano* (1883) ; *Odes and Eclogues* (1884) ; *Songs and Odes* (1896) ; *Last Poems* (1905) ; *Selected Poems* (1909). Canon Dixon's claims for poetical recognition have been ably championed by Robert Bridges and by Mary Coleridge, though unfortunately

Bridges attempts to elevate him by special pleading and the unnecessary disparagement of Morris. Such was Dixon's wayward occupation with poetry that he never mastered its technical problems. He assumes those privileges of imperfect rhyming and stress variation which the Pre-Raphaelites employed, merely to roughride the difficulties that he encounters. Four lines more bleak than those with which his *Story of Eudocia* opens can hardly be imagined :

Theodosius the Roman Emperor,  
Son of Arcadius, was named Junior,  
Being grandson of Theodosius the Great,  
And in weak nonage raised to his estate.

The same technical difficulties crumble and corrupt the verse of *Mano*, an experiment in a *terza rima* presentation of a tenth century theme. Dixon cannot, however, be judged from his narrative poetry, though the same deficiencies often intrude to mar his lyrics. In the following poem, which Mary Coleridge praised in high terms, one doubts if the mood is helped by the persistent imperfection of the rhymes :

The feathers of the willow  
Are half of them grown yellow  
    Above the swelling stream ;  
And ragged are the bushes,  
And rusty now the rushes,  
    And wild the clouded gleam.

The thistle now is older,  
His stalk begins to moulder,  
    His head is white as snow ;  
The branches all are barer,  
The linnet's song is rarer,  
    The robin pipeth now.

As Bridges detected, Dixon's poetical work grew better in his later periods. His early verse has an occasional influence derived from Morris in Pre-Raphaelite mood, with an exploitation of a religious melancholia that leaves life damp and inert. This atmosphere is partly relieved, and there is a greater compensating strength in the *St. John* volume, where the most successful poem, *St. Mary Magdalene*, is closely Pre-Raphaelite.

The volume entitled *Historical Odes* has more variety: the historical pieces themselves are ponderous and creaking poems, on Wellington (with an abstract but able picture of Waterloo), and on Marlborough, but Dixon also writes dramatically of a number of religious incidents: *Legion*, *St. Thomas in India*, and the Pre-Raphaelite *Joseph of Arimathea* and *Nicodemus*. A few lyrics, including *The Feathers of the Willow*, show more colour than the earlier work possessed.

The later lyrics were issued privately after a gap of more than twenty years. They possess an increased mastery of form, using a classical reserve and formality mingled with some archaism and eccentricity of vocabulary. Religious themes dominate, instructed by a persistent melancholia, yet in *The Mystery of the Body*, *Ode on Conflicting Claims*, and *I Rode my Horse to the Hostel Gate*, Dixon has explored successfully moods which the technical resources of his earlier poetry would not have sustained. These volumes gain variety of theme by Dixon's poems on classical themes—*Ulysses and Calypso*, *Mercury to Prometheus*, and others; in a genre which the nineteenth century flogged threadbare Dixon contrives an individuality by directness and simplicity. The most memorable of these later poems is *The Fall of the Leaf*, a nature study, sustained by a melancholic imagery similar to that in his contemplative poems, although even here a technical casualness mars the perfection of effect:

Rise in their place the woods: the trees have cast,  
Like earth to earth, their children: now they stand  
Above the graves where lie their very last:  
Each pointing with her empty hand  
And mourning o'er the russet floor,  
Naked and dispossessed:  
The queenly sycamore,  
The linden and the aspen, and the rest.

As a poet Dixon is held captive both by technical waywardness and limitation of mood. When he breaks through his depression, to poems of nature and fancy, as in *Fallen Rain*, or in *Ode: The Spirit Wooed*, he has a rare gift of phrase and imagery. It was this element that attracted Bridges, and to read Dixon in the few selected passages in Bridges's preface

is to gain the conviction that one is in the presence of a great poet. So seldom is this freedom attained that we have to search for it in the poems, and as we proceed the growing darknesses gather round. He returns frequently to a bleak account of the spiritual dilemma under which he suffered :

Here I wander about, and here I mournfully ponder :  
Weary to me is the sun, weary the coming of night :  
Here is captivity still, there would be captivity yonder :  
Like to myself are the rest, smitten is all with a blight.

So Dixon associates himself with that mood of spiritual depression, uninstructed by passion or anger, which infects a number of nineteenth century poets.

Mary Elizabeth Coleridge <sup>2</sup> (1861-1907), who had Samuel Taylor Coleridge among her forebears, published in her lifetime but little poetry, and that under the pseudonym of 'Anodos'.<sup>3</sup> In 1896 Robert Bridges persuaded her to issue a private and limited edition of poems, *Fancy's Following*, and a modified form of this collection appeared in 1897 as *Fancy's Guerdon* in one of Elkin Mathews's *Shilling Garland Series*. The main collection of her verses was made in 1907,<sup>2</sup> after her death, by Sir Henry Newbolt.

Poetry occupied but a small part of her life ; she wrote prose romances, some of which, like *The King with Two Faces*, brought her a wide popularity, and she had many charitable and social activities. There comes through the scanty biographical records and there reappears in the poems an impression of a vibrant, keenly living personality. Her *Letters and Diaries* show her arising from a religious atmosphere, and poised in deep interest, before the problems of the modern world. Her contrasting interests are symbolized in her diary entry in 1891 ; 'Ghosts, and a sermon fifty-six minutes long, all in the course of one week.' She seems, in her earlier poems and in the letters, to seek the sensuous pageantry of colour and form in the living world :

Pour me red wine from out the Venice flask,  
Pour faster, faster yet !  
The joy of ruby thought I do not ask,  
Bid me forget !

Gradually an inwardness of thought develops, a hesitancy and distrust of experience, and an increased preoccupation with religion :

Bid me remember, O my gracious Lord,  
The flattering words of love are merely breath !  
O not in roses wreathe the shining sword,  
Bid me remember, O my gracious Lord,  
The bitter taste of death !

All her poems are short lyrics, arising frequently from some suggestion of personal experience. It is difficult without biographical material to trace these moods separately to their sources. Her development has some parallel with that of Christina Rossetti, and the resultant verse is at times similar, though Mary Coleridge's range is much more confined. Both sought within the world, for warmth, colour, and love ; both withdrew hesitantly towards religion. The progress is less definitely marked in Mary Coleridge, and one feels that William Johnson Cory, who was her friend and tutor, may have helped her towards the final resolution of this conflict.

Technically her work is secure, and here again Cory's influence may be traced. Of direct reminiscence there is little in her work ; Robert Bridges compared her poetry to that of Heine, but this was merely to suggest her concentration of a mood into a short poem with an apparently effortless movement. Certain recurring *idées génératrices* can be traced throughout. The most remarkable is the mood which gains dramatic expression in a story of magic, the pieces such as *Master and Guest*, *The Witch*, *Wilderspin*, which have led a critic to speak of her as ' the tail of the comet, S. T. C.' These poems, apart from the Pre-Raphaelite influence in *Wilderspin*, seem all compact of originality. Allied to them are a number of lyrics, fashioning out a mood in a more personal manner ; they include the powerful sonnet *Imagination* ( ' I called you, fiery spirits, and ye came ' ), and *The Other Side of a Mirror*, a poem suggestive of the Metaphysicals, and expressed with great verbal cunning. Many of the lyrics have a less definite background, though their movement and expression are often skilfully contrived. Such a piece is *A Moment* :

The clouds had made a crimson crown  
Above the mountains high,



The stormy sun was going down  
In a stormy sky.

Why did you let your eyes so rest on me,  
And hold your breath between ?  
In all the ages this can never be  
As if it had not been.

Along with these poems of mood she writes on mystical and religious themes, and these become more prevalent in the later years. Frequently the religious theme is given brief poignant expression as a simple experience, as in *Depart from me, I know thee not*, and *Thee have I sought, divine Humility*.

Mary Coleridge was able to reveal only a part of her personality in verse ; her letters, and her prose work show that there was a quiet ironic laughter in her spirit which never comes through into her poetry. Like many other women of her time, and among them Christina Rossetti, she had narrow opportunities for experience. Such of her life as she could convert into poetry she rendered with precision and beauty. One wonders whether if she had been more deeply distressed, with wider clashes of happiness and despair, the resultant yield in poetry would have been richer. Contact with Canon Dixon may have helped to develop her melancholia, though she combated it with a variety of mood to which Dixon never attained. All that she wrote leads one to wish that she had written more. There developed in her work poems such as *Mother to a Baby*, simple, like Blake's early verse, and yet powerful. She could, more perhaps than any woman poet of the century, concentrate her meaning with epigrammatic precision. The following poem is a single thrust unerring and yet controlled :

Forgive ? O yes ! how lightly, lightly said !  
Forget ? No, never, while the ages roll,  
Till God slay o'er again the undying dead,  
And quite unmake my soul !

Gerard Manley Hopkins (1844-1889),<sup>4</sup> was a poet whose place and influence on nineteenth century poetry it will be left for the twentieth century to determine. Apart from a small circle of intimates, which included Coventry Patmore and Robert Bridges, his work was hidden away in manuscript

from most of his contemporaries. His poetic remains were entrusted to Robert Bridges, who allowed a few of the poems to appear in anthologies,<sup>5</sup> but waited until 1918 for changed values in poetry and thought before he launched the complete work in volume form. The interest aroused led to the publication of a *Life* by Father G. F. Lahey, and to the separate issue of Hopkins's early poem, *A Vision of the Mermaids*.<sup>6</sup>

The child of a cultured family, Hopkins showed even as a schoolboy at Highgate Grammar School an unusual interest in study, not unmixed with a certain eccentricity of mood, while his religious development was influenced by Canon Dixon, then a curate at Lambeth and an occasional teacher at Highgate. Poetry already attracted him, and his early verse shows that Spenser and the romantic poets, with Keats dominant, were among his enthusiasms. In 1862 he won a school prize with a poem in couplets on *A Vision of the Mermaids*. His school career closed with a Balliol scholarship. His entry into an Oxford that was filled with religious enthusiasms and controversies proved a crucial event in his life ; eighteen years earlier Newman had entered the Roman Catholic Church, and the repercussions of his conversion were still strongly felt ; Pusey remained in Oxford, the leader of the Tractarian movement and of Anglo-Catholicism. In 1863, when Hopkins entered Oxford, Pusey was challenging the more rational and intellectual conceptions of Christianity which were represented by Benjamin Jowett, then Professor of Greek. Hopkins, already endowed with keenly religious preoccupations, was affected by all three men and by other, more intimate, religious teachers. His university career in the schools was brilliant, but Oxford for him was an arena in which he had to settle what form of faith should gain ascendancy. He moved, largely under Newman's influence, from Puseyism to Catholicism. His letters show how deeply his conversion affected his whole being. He offended his family ; he isolated himself from many Oxford personalities whom he revered ; a deep cicatrice was left upon his spirit which could be healed only by a passionate attachment to his faith. The English convert, particularly in the sixties, was conscious that he was in a minority ; he was led by his comparative isolation to a strenuous and fervid loyalty to that which he had found. For Hopkins, after his

Oxford days, religious experience is the one experience that matters. He entered the Society of Jesus (1868) and subordinated himself passionately to its discipline. Poetry, particularly his early romantic exercises, belonged to another world, and he burnt much of his early work. He was initiated into the Society first at Roehampton and later at Stonyhurst. Poetry, which he had set aside when he entered the Society in 1868, he was fortunately encouraged to recommence. His individual verse, which arose from his faith, and his deep and mystical attachment to it, belongs to these later years (1875-1889). It can be supplemented by his diaries, which reveal the dark and tumultuous movement of his mind in its contemplative and mystical moods. He filled a number of appointments as he was directed, both as lecturer and teacher. In 1884 he became Professor of Greek in the Catholic University of Ireland. Five years later he died of typhoid fever.

Hopkins's originality of mind is marked on both the form and content of his poetry, and it makes the approach to his work difficult. So Robert Bridges is led to speak of *The Wreck of the Deutschland* as 'a great dragon folded in the gate to forbid all entrance'. His work is divided abruptly into two divisions: the early poems up to 1868, and the later verse beginning with *The Deutschland* in 1875. First among the early pieces stand the school poems, *The Escorial*, a clever but boyish exercise in Byronic Spenserians and octaves, and the much more effective and mature poem in couplets, *A Vision of the Mermaids* (1862). Keats's influence is marked both in the irregularity of the prosody and in the union of classical and faery elements in the theme. But already Hopkins shows his power in imaginative epithet, which later grows into one of his marked characteristics. Little of his work in this early period, 1862-1868, survives. Bridges suggests that he was attracted by George Herbert, whose influence is retained in his later work. The poems which remain show what he achieved in traditional forms. Amongst them is the remarkable *Winter with the Gulf-stream*,<sup>7</sup> which, touched with memories of the romantic sadness that lingers in Keats's *La Belle Dame sans Merci*, conveys Hopkins's fresh approach to nature; his capacity of looking at ordinary objects as if they had never been seen before and certainly as if no one had built up a conventional vocabulary

in which to describe them. Such at the close of the poem is his impression of a sunset of the mild winter day :

And slendering to his burning rim

Into the flat blue mist the sun

Drops out and all our day is done.

Hopkins has himself described his attitude to poetry after he had entered the Society of Jesus : ' I resolved to write no more, as not belonging to my profession, unless it were by the wish of my superiors ; so for seven years I wrote nothing but two or three little presentation pieces which occasion called for.' <sup>8</sup> Though he ceased from writing, he did not cease to think about poetry : ' I had long had haunting my ear the echo of a new rhythm.' So that when in the winter of 1875 he is moved by the death of five Franciscan nuns on board the ' Deutschland ' to transfer this rhythm to paper, he writes a poetry which has few points of identity with his early work. The prosody is fresh, the syntax individual, the vocabulary and epithets unusual to the point of obscurity. All these elements unite with an inwardness of thought to give this poem a place apart from the work of his contemporaries. No one in 1875 was writing poetry similar to this found in *The Deutschland* :

I am soft sift

In an hourglass—at the wall

Fast, but mined with a motion, a drift,

And it crowds and it combs to the fall ;

I steady as a water in a well, to a poise, to a pane,

But roped with, always, all the way down from the tall

Fells or flanks of the voel, a vein

Of the gospel proffer, a pressure, a principle, Christ's gift.

Such verses, had they been printed, would have been inexplicable to an audience in the seventies, and it is doubtful whether any later audience could have pursued their thought without the aid of marginal comments. Yet, like the metaphysical poets who influenced him, he possesses, despite obscurity, a keen originality, and a sincere poetic purpose, and these positive elements have had an influence on later poetry, notably on the work of Robert Bridges.

The first unusual element lies in the prosody itself, a matter

in which Hopkins was deeply interested. He wrote a *Preface on Prosody* for the manuscript collection of his poems. It is not unmarked by eccentricity, particularly in the intrusion of an individual vocabulary, borrowed partly from music. Yet its central principle is clearly enunciated and is allied to the oldest elements in English poetry, the rhythm of Anglo-Saxon verse and of *Piers Plowman*. Briefly, Hopkins claims licence to write in Sprung Rhythm, or in feet, in which one accented syllable is followed by one or two or three unaccented syllables as the poet may consider necessary. A line may thus vary from four single accented syllables to sixteen syllables, in which four are accented and twelve are unaccented. Usually these extremes are not used, but varying feet are united into a rhythmical pattern. Thus, to quote a single example, Hopkins allows in his alexandrine sonnet on Henry Purcell lines such as,

Of the outward sentence low lays him, listed to a heresy, here.

Allied to this adventure in prosody is his elliptical use of grammatical structure. Like Meredith, he finds the relative pronoun a troublesome element, and his solution, which sometimes befogs the reader, is to leave it out altogether. Bridges has commented on this peculiarity and on its probable origin : ' He needed in his scheme all his space for his poetical words, and he wished those to crowd out every merely grammatical colourless or toneless element ; and so when he had got into the habit of doing without these relative pronouns—though he must, I suppose, have supplied them in his thought,—he abuses the licence beyond precedent, as when he writes " O Hero savest ! " for " O Hero that savest ! " ' <sup>9</sup>

He possessed throughout his mature work a desire to remove from a poem all that was dross, all explanatory matter, the links and transitions which rob words of that unity of impression which a painting or music possesses. In his sonnet *God's Grandeur* he writes :

The world is charged with the grandeur of God.  
It will flame out, like shining from shook foil.

It is with such sudden glamour that he would endue his poems. The approach is best described in his own words, and it is not

without significance that he realizes the mixture of oddity in his originality: 'But as air, melody, is what strikes me most of all in music, and design in painting, so design, pattern, or what I am in the habit of calling *inscape*, is what I above all aim at in poetry. Now it is the virtue of design, pattern or inscape to be distinctive, and it is the vice of distinctiveness to become queer. This vice I cannot have escaped.'<sup>10</sup> He intended his poetry to be read quickly, in the trust that the whole will reveal any obscurity which the detailed parts may possess.<sup>11</sup> He used alliteration freely to strike this conception of speed and unity, and, as Charles Williams has pointed out, it is not the gently luxuriating alliteration of Swinburne but a rush of alliterative words which, though at first sight they seem to have been flung together impulsively, frequently resolved themselves into a keen imaginative expression.<sup>4</sup> These licences seem sometimes mere wantonness, but that Hopkins is conscious of the necessity for restraint can be seen in his remark that he hopes to work out towards a 'more balanced and Miltonic style'.

*The Wreck of the Deutschland* reveals his central position as a poet. In the first part he explores the distress of a spirit recalled by a sudden catastrophe to a realization of God's scourging of humanity: 'Dost thou touch me afresh.' He feels the agony of disunity in the Universe, the soul afflicted by God: 'Thou heardst me truer than tongue confess, Thy terror, O Christ, O God.' For Hopkins the meaning of such suffering and the reconciliation to God lies in the contemplation of Christ's Passion:

Its dates from day  
Of his going in Galilee;  
Warm-laid grave of a womb-life grey.

The second part opens with a swingeing description of the storm, concentrating on the bravery of the Nun who cried to the 'black-about air', 'O Christ, Christ, come quickly.' So the second part concludes with a resolution of that anguish with which the first part opened:

Dame, at our door  
Drowned, and among our shoals,  
Remember us in the roads, the heaven-haven of the  
Reward:

Our king back, oh, upon English souls !  
 Let him easter in us, be a dayspring to the dimness of us, be a  
 crimson-cresseted east,  
 More brightening her, rare-dear Britain, as his reign rolls,  
 Pride, rose, prince, hero of us, high-priest,  
 Our heart's charity's hearth's fire, our thoughts' chivalry's throng's  
 Lord.

Contemporary with *The Deutschland* are a few strangely ineffectual regular poems, *Penmaen Pool*, and *The Silver Jubilee*. It is as if Hopkins, discovering his own methods in poetry, had grown impatient of the more conventional approaches, and used them with but indifferent skill. He discovers himself again in the sonnets of 1877, pieces such as *God's Grandeur* and *The Starlight Night* ; they reveal a poet who sees nature and every phenomenon of life as a gift and a glorification of God. Such poetry can easily fall into declamation and rhetoric. Hopkins elevates it by his impetuous epithets, each flushed with new colouring and sent speeding into his poem. Amongst these sonnets is *The Windhover (To Christ our Lord)*, which Hopkins himself described as 'the best thing I ever wrote'. This description of the kestrel's flight shows the virtues gained from his poetic method without the licence that sometimes disfigures his most unrestrained adventures :

I caught this morning morning's minion, king-  
     dom of daylight's dauphin,  
     dapple-dawn-drawn Falcon, in his riding  
 Of the rolling level underneath him steady air, and striding  
 High there, how he rung upon the rein of a wimpling wing  
 In his ecstasy ! then off, off forth on swing,  
     As a skate's heel sweeps smooth on a bow-bend : the hurl and  
     gliding  
 Rebuffed the big wind. My heart in hiding  
 Stirred for a bird,—the achieve of, the mastery of the thing.

Distress at sea has an unusual attraction to religious minds, and in 1878 Hopkins returned to this theme in *The Loss of the Eurydice*. He himself confessed to a 'kind of raw nakedness and unmitigated violence in this poem'. The criticism is not excessive : phrases in the poem recall Cowper's *Loss of the Royal George* only to reveal Hopkins's diffuseness, while with the memories of *The Deutschland* still in one's mind the poem

seems to combine pedestrianism with poetic wantonness. The rhymes are forced ; the phrasing frequently crude ( ' The Eurydice—it concerned thee, O Lord ' ), while there is little strengthening element of spiritual energy or of sudden imaginative insight.

Among Hopkins's other poems two pieces stand out as portrayals of moments in life seen as a priest sees them ; they combine a dramatic sense of human experience with that sudden insight into spiritual susceptibilities which was Hopkins's peculiar power. *The Bugler's First Communion* (1879) is a theme full of treacheries ; Hopkins avoids them. He allows the poem to tremble on the edge of the grotesque, and when it seems in danger, saves it by some sudden phrase keenly conceived. Such, too, is his sonnet *Felix Randal* (1880), which describes the death of a farrier, ' big-boned and hardy-hand-some '. There emerges from among the later poems a group of sonnets, which explore the same thought as is found in *The Deutschland*, but in a darker, more personal manner. The deep passion of a soul contending with God has frequently been a theme in religious confessions ; it has seldom gained an expression quickened with such poetic power. ' This tormented mind tormenting yet ' seems at first a strange theme for Hopkins who has written so well of the miracle of life. Yet his gloom is not like that of the later nineteenth-century poets who turn from life in distaste or weariness. It is a positive and impassioned experience, which can only be identified by those who can explore it sympathetically in religious values, but its reality is made certain by the poetic manner in which it is revealed. So in the sonnet *Carrion Comfort* :

Not, I'll not, carrion comfort, Despair, not feast on thee ;  
 Not untwist—slack they may be—these last strands of man  
 In me or, most weary, cry *I can no more*. I can ;  
 Can something, hope, wish day come, not choose not to be.

Little useful service can be performed to a religious poet by ignoring his defects because one is in sympathy with his attitude. Most religious poets in the nineteenth century have suffered in that way. One feels that Father Lahey and even Charles Williams have felt it necessary at times to depreciate other verse in order to praise Hopkins's peculiar qualities.



It is fortunate, therefore, that he was first presented in published form by Robert Bridges, who, though aware of his unusual powers, was adequately critical of his eccentricities. While influenced by Hopkins himself, Bridges had his classical training to warn him from excesses. Nor can Hopkins be easily imitated by the isolation of any one element in his poetic method. He had the power of a great poet, to see life afresh, and he demanded an individualized vocabulary and rhythm to express what he had seen. His kinship with the metaphysical poets is obvious. His study of George Herbert is shown in his creation of religious experience into the tangible and visible imagery of human experience. Like Herbert and Vaughan he delights in catalogues of similes, or of epithets praising the Deity, but he has derived less from their seventeenth century delight in conceit. The passion of his religious life recalls that of Donne ; yet he lacked Donne's learning, nor did he come to religion with such a rich background of varied human activity. He approaches most closely to Donne in some of the religious sonnets where he uses an acrid physical imagery for the explanation of a religious mood :

I am gall, I am heartburn. God's most deep decree  
 Bitter would have me taste : my taste was me ;  
 Bones built in me, flesh filled, blood brimmed the curse.  
     Self yeast of spirit a dull dough sours. I see  
 The lost are like this, and their scourge to be  
 As I am mine, their sweating selves ; but worse.

When all these parallels have been fully explored, there is a central element in Hopkins which allies him to Milton rather than to Donne and to his followers.<sup>12</sup> Beyond his poetically ' metaphysical ' elements he is, like Milton, truly metaphysical in revealing in his poetry a philosophical view of the Universe. With Milton he shares a sense of dedicating his poetic purpose : he would reveal the ways of God if not to man at least to himself. This gives to all his most memorable verse a consistency of purpose : to suggest the grandeur of God and to explore the terror of God as it afflicts his soul. In that pursuit he was led both by eccentricity and a sense of isolation to oddity and obscurity, but he gained new values for words, new impacts between the mind and experience.

This study of later nineteenth century includes a poem, *The Testament of Beauty*, published in 1929 by a poet eighty-five years old. In chronology much of Robert Bridges's work lies outside the nineteenth century, but he had published a pamphlet of verse as early as 1873, and the motives of his later poetry find anticipation in his early work. Last of the Victorians, he gathered much of what that age held dear and revered, and, presenting it in his last years, he found a strangely wide appreciation from a generation that had turned to other values and methods in its art.

Robert Seymour Bridges <sup>13</sup> (1844-1930) passed his boyhood at his parents' house at Walmer on the Kentish coast. From 1854-1863 he was at Eton, where he distinguished himself in study and in games, and showed equally his power of sympathizing with the wayward personality of Digby Mackworth Dolben. From Eton he moved to Oxford and consolidated the interest in classical studies which penetrated so firmly into his creative work. Poetry attracted him early, though his first volume, a thin pamphlet of lyrics, did not appear until 1873. Poetry seemed already his spiritual profession, but he determined to widen his contacts with life; he spent eight months in Germany and travelled in Syria and Egypt, and later in a number of European countries. He applied himself to scientific and medical studies; he was a student at St. Bartholomew's and later a physician at the Children's Hospital, Great Ormond Street, and at the Great Northern Hospital. In 1882 he gave up medicine and settled at Yattendon; in 1884 he married. The years spent at Yattendon (1882-1905) were productive years poetically, for most of the plays and many of the minor poems were then written. After a stay of some months in Switzerland (1905-1906) he returned to England and built Chilswell House on Boar's Hill, near Oxford. There he lived for the last twenty-five years of his life. In 1913 he was made Poet Laureate, and in 1929 he received the Order of Merit. This year was marked, too, by the publication of *The Testament of Beauty*. On April 21, 1930, he died.

Bridges's lyrical poetry is known to most readers from the collected editions, but it was first published in a number of small volumes, issued privately at frequent intervals. *Poems* (1873), was followed by *The Growth of Love* (1876, 1889, 1898)

and by pamphlets of verse (1879, 1880, 1884, 1890, 1893, 1894, 1896). Many of these were revised and issued together in 1899 and in 1912. There followed *Now in Wintry Delights* (1903); *October and Other Poems* (1920); *New Verse* (1921). Apart from these volumes of short poems, *Eros and Psyche*, a narrative poem, had been published in 1885, and plays and masques were issued: *Prometheus the Firegiver* (1883); *Nero* (1885 and 1894); *The Feast of Bacchus* (1889); *Palicio* (1890); *The Return of Ulysses* (1890); *Achilles in Scyros* (1890); *The Christian Captives* (1890); *The Humours of the Court* (1893); *Demeter, a masque* (1905). Finally in 1929 there was published *The Testament of Beauty*.

Bridges has affirmed his own approach to poetry in contrasting it with that of D. M. Dolben: 'What had led me to poetry was the inexhaustible satisfaction of form, the magic of speech, lying as it seemed to me in the masterly control of the material: it was an art which I hoped to learn. An instinctive rightness was essential, but, given that, I did not suppose that the poet's emotions were in any way better than mine, nor mine than another's: and, though I should not at that time have put in in these words, I think that Dolben imagined poetic form to be the naïve outcome of peculiar personal emotion.'<sup>14</sup> These principles result in that attraction for prosodic experiment which is always present in Bridges's work. The interest leads alike to lyrical success, to the Delilah of classical and quantitative verse, and to the final genial compromise of the 'loose alexandrines' in *The Testament of Beauty*. His emphasis on form has an influence apart from prosody. In finding poetic suggestion in commonly-shared experience he escapes from the romantic excess of much nineteenth-century verse, and equally from the search for the odd and grotesque. He returns to a principle that would have pleased Pope and Dr. Johnson—'What oft was thought but ne'er so well expressed'—though he interprets this elucidation of the commonplace in his own way. The approach explains, as is noted below, many of the more memorable lyrics, such as *London Snow*.

In this precise discipline he matured his poetic individuality, but certain elements were thus consciously excluded. He seems to have grown distrustful of imagery, a poetic instrument that can never be used with consistent success, but which,

while leading sometimes to the ludicrous, frequently impregnates language afresh. That Bridges valued this power can be seen from the passage in his essay on Keats, where he describes imagery as the highest gift in poetry: 'I mean the power of concentrating all the far-reaching resources of language on one point, so that a single and apparently effortless expression rejoices the aesthetic imagination at the moment when it is most expectant and exacting, and at the same time astonishes the intellect with a new aspect of truth.'<sup>15</sup> The gift is not absent in Bridges: it adorns *The Growth of Love* and *The Testament of Beauty*; but one is conscious that it has been restrained both by his sense of diffidence and in obedience to self-imposed principles. Reticence penetrated from vocabulary into subject. His early reading in the classics was continued throughout his life; many of his lyrics record the pleasure he thus received. The attraction of classical form, obvious in his dramas and in the quantitative pieces, penetrates in a more subtle way into his other poems. He supplements it with a close study of English poets who were similarly influenced, of Spenser and Milton, and incorporates their adaptation of Italian models, particularly the *canzone*. Of romantic influences he is more suspicious. Shelley, particularly in his Greek affinities, attracts him, and *The Hymn to Intellectual Beauty* has a place in the development of his philosophy. In his essay on Keats he extracts the frequent perfection of phrase from the relapses into technical inadequacy, while Keats's withdrawal from life into the contemplation of Beauty finds a parallel in his own experience. But from the glamour of romantic poetry, with the consequent risk of insecurity, he turns with something like disdain. This attitude is emphasized by a strong distaste for the Victorian romanticism of the Pre-Raphaelites. It arose, in part, out of a personal loyalty to Canon Dixon, who, once an undergraduate companion of Morris, retained his religious faith, and found himself isolated in temper and achievement from the associates of Rossetti. This antagonism, presumably, leads to his exclusion of Morris and Rossetti from his anthology, *The Spirit of Man* (1917). Along with these excesses of romantic poetry he avoided instinctively both the coarse, animal elements which occur in Chaucer, Shakespeare, and Burns, and that preoccupation with blood and tears which

intrudes into the Elizabethans and into Browning. This fastidiousness can most easily be seen in his attitude to Shakespeare. To the language he surrenders his admiration : Shakespeare mastered the supreme gift which Keats had fitfully possessed, and in *The Testament of Beauty* the *Sonnets* are neatly epitomized :

those golden sonnets  
that swim like gondolas i' the wake of his drama.

Yet for the broader humour of the plays and their unabashed contact with the grosser elements in life he expressed in his essays a strong, even prim disapproval.<sup>16</sup> His objections to Browning, who was also excluded from *The Spirit of Man*, were probably more deep-rooted. The stridency of Browning's verse, the acrobatics of vocabulary combined with grotesque, unusual themes, and heavy trencher-work in didacticism, served to render his poetry an epitome of all that Bridges would avoid.

The picture of Bridges removed from contemporary influence in the calm and secure contemplation of classical influences would, however, be inaccurate. He had contacts, but they were not with the major poets of his age. Led by an almost Quixotic loyalty, he attaches himself to a number of writers, whose recognition results from his championship. They were all religious poets : Canon Dixon, a pedestrian writer whom Bridges extolled with partisan enthusiasm ; D. M. Dolben, a young religious lyricist whose inequality he was willing to allow ; and Gerard Manley Hopkins, an original if erratic poet, whose conceptions of poetry and art had a deep effect on Bridges's own work. Despite his sympathy with their religious verse, he seems to have preserved for himself a conception of belief that arose from art or philosophy rather than from a religious faith. This he has suggested himself in his memoir of Dolben. He seems to have revered religion, and sought contact with religious writers, while standing aside in an independence of thought. The closest glimpse of his own mind in this matter can be found in his summary of Henry Bradley's beliefs : ' He respected all well-accredited opinion, though he never allowed its authority to hamper the freedom of his convictions. . . . Religion in such a mind is inseparable from

Philosophy : that part of it which is separable,—habits of devotion, the colour of its mysticism, the congeniality of certain symbols,—are intimate and secret matters inexplicable often to oneself.' <sup>17</sup> His championship of these poets marked beyond loyalty a certain stubborn independence of judgment. At times he seems not a little exultant that his own values differ widely from those usually received. So he asserts that his loyalty to his friend, William Johnson Stone, led him to persist in his experiments in quantitative verse. Individuality led at times dangerously near to singularity, as when he intruded his experiments in simplified spelling into his essays and into *The Testament of Beauty*. Free from economic restraint, continually in contact with the English countryside, and with Oxford and its associations close at hand, he matured his art. From his published work the kinship of his mind would appear to bear some resemblance to that which has been above outlined ; it can be pursued more certainly and in further detail in the study of his poetry.

Bridges's volume of 1873 showed his earliest poetic pre-occupations. The first impression is of his discipline and enterprise in prosodic form. Earlier than Gosse and Dobson, he had manipulated the rondeau and the triolet, though unlike them he employed these verse patterns for serious themes. In *Elegy* (' Assemble, all ye maidens at the door ') he used an eight-line stanza, reminiscent of Spenser, yet of original movement, while each of the lyrics had its own tune and no pattern was repeated. He had separated himself from the interests of his contemporaries ; the rhythms of Tennyson, Browning, and the Pre-Raphaelites were rejected, and for them was substituted a severer harmony, Miltonic already in suggestion, though mingled at times with easier movements that might come from a Jacobean anthology. A Swinburnian suggestion intruded momentarily in ' The wood is bare : a river-mist is steeping ', but it only emphasized how far the other poems were removed. The themes were equally individual ; love lyrics, and nature fancies occurred, but the main quality was classical, an avoidance of the grotesque and unusual and the keen portrayal of common elements in adequately sustained language. This can be seen in its simplicity in *Clear and Gentle Stream* :

Where back eddies play  
 Shipwreck with the leaves,  
 And the proud swans stray,  
 Sailing one by one  
 Out of stream and sun,  
 And the fish lie cool  
 In their chosen pool.

Such lines manipulate common experience without apparent emphasis, and yet contrive to render them poetically. Personal poems appeared, and the most memorable among them was the lyric which begins :

Long are the hours the sun is above,  
 But when evening comes I go home to my love.

Bridges erected in this poem the image of himself which remains throughout his work ; of one who seeks quietude for the contemplation of the best that nature has given to man of art, beauty, and love. Nor was his prosodic control ever more secure than in his strengthening of the treacherous anapaest with trochee and iamb in this poem.

The poems published in 1879 continue the tradition of the earlier volume. Nature themes dominate, but they are approached in measures reminiscent of the Italian *canzone* as used by Spenser and Milton. Such is the tune of *There is a hill beside the silver Thames*, yet within the formal pattern the verse retains simple diction and an unusual visual clarity :

Sometimes an angler comes, and drops his hook  
 Within its hidden depths, and 'gainst a tree  
 Leaning his rod, reads in some pleasant book,  
 Forgetting soon his pride of fishery.

The outstanding poem of this type is *The Downs* ('O bold, majestic downs, smooth, fair and lonely'), in which the resources of the stanza are united with cunning manipulation of vowels to construct a nature picture. Here again he preferred classical description in general terms for 'Gothic' exuberance in detail, preserving the elements which were of universal appeal. One poem, *Invitation to the Country* and *Reply* reveals his personal development, and, as in the earlier

volume, suggests a quiet certainty of desire. Here he discussed his art, suggesting that while he does not possess the Dionysiac power to 'play with hidden things', he can yet exercise his art in portraying Nature and Beauty,

And am content, denied  
The best, in choosing right.

The volume of 1880, while arising from the same poetic methods and motives, possesses a richer range of theme. This can be seen in *London Snow*. Previously Bridges had isolated the commonplace elements in an ordinary experience, and united them into a poetic reality, but never has he so successfully converted the usual into the universal. Prosody aids him; the anapaest used sparingly, and inverted feet quietly intruded on a firm iambic background with swift double rhymes, 'flying', 'lying', and solid single rhymes, 'brown', 'down', 'town', to suggest the mingled movement and stillness of the snow. It remains as a lyric achievement, simple in its final effect but attained by a rare skill and economy. The deeper content of this volume can be perceived elsewhere, notably in *On a Dead Child*:

Perfect little body, without fault or stain on thee,

which carries memories of the *canzone* pattern and of Milton's early and artificial treatment of the same theme in *On the Death of a Fair Infant*:

O fairest flower, no sooner blown but blasted.

In this volume can be found also the first firm expression of that poetic faith which culminates later in *The Testament of Beauty*. Its outline may be found in *Joy sweetest lifeborn joy, where dost thou dwell?*, a poem in rime royal. Seeking joy, which is the breath of God, the poet is bewildered by earth's cruelty:

The grinding enginry of blood and breath,  
Pain's random darts, the heartless spade of death.

Yet though neither earth nor God's plan seems organized for joy, the sudden moment returns, quickening the blood and



mind. The poet's function is to taste that moment, and then to give it poetical expression. Bridges's conception of beauty as 'most blessed truth' has some parallel with that of Keats, whom he studied closely, nor are suggestions of Pater lacking. He interprets it, however, as a savour of God, a conclusion which they would not have allowed; he is at one here with Ruskin, with whom he had apparently little contact, and with his friend Gerard Manley Hopkins.

The lyrics of 1893 and 1899 do not modify the conclusions gained from the earlier pieces. Nature lyrics dominate, and they are presented in forms varying from the elaborate movement of *The Garden in September* :

Now thin mists temper the slow-ripening beams  
Of the September sun,

to the almost ballad simplicity of *The north wind came up yesternight*. The poems of 1893 gain a continuity as nature is pursued through the months, and the seasons, and the changing moods captured in happy sequence. He returns to the themes from which his poetry first arose, and emphasizes that poetry seizes joy from life, rejecting 'mournful strains' :

But since I have found the beauty of joy  
I have done with proud dismay :  
For howso'er man hug his care  
The best of his art is gay.

During this period of lyrical work Bridges had also been occupied with a sonnet sequence, *The Growth of Love* : an early issue of *XXIV Sonnets* appeared in 1876; this had been increased to *LXXIX Sonnets* in 1889; the final issue (1898) was of *LXIX Sonnets*. Bridges found technical satisfaction in the sonnet; he used mainly the Italian form, through varying this with the easier English pattern. Elizabethan memories enter, though more in structure than in verbal echoes. So in *Sonnet 13*,

And tho' where'er thou goest it is from me,  
I where I go thee in my heart must bear,

he is using the nice balance of the Elizabethan sonnet, and frequently (as in *Sonnet 15*, 'Who builds a ship must first lay

down the keel '), he toys with a comparison until the sonnet becomes one prolonged conceit. Yet his seriousness excludes dainty devices and Petrarchan gambadoes. His success is frequently greatest when restraint has infused itself through an Elizabethan pattern, as when, in *Sonnet 30*, he conducts a simple, sincere argument within a closely antithetical structure :

My lady pleases me and I please her ;  
This know we both.

In theme the sequence portrays love from its early moments to the fears of death, and emphasizes the effect of love on art and life. It becomes Bridges's fullest expression, up to 1898, of his philosophy. Previously he had shown how in seeking joy he had been bewildered by the world's cruelty. Now he suggests (*Sonnet 3*) that love has dissolved 'that old feud 'twixt things and me', and this is allied to a conception of Divine Love in the closing sonnet. Through love he has been able to renew his search for Beauty, for Love has endowed nature with new values. So he re-affirms that the quest of beauty is the most satisfying human endeavour (*Sonnet 8*) :

For beauty being the best of all we know  
Sums up the unsearchable and secret aims  
Of nature, and on joys whose earthly names  
Were never told can form and sense bestow ;  
And man hath sped his instinct to outgo  
The step of science ; and against her shames  
Imagination stakes out heavenly claims,  
Building a tower above the head of woe.

Further, in *Sonnet 16* he imagines the world to be a work of art which God has left for man to complete, a task which can be achieved only by seeking 'the face of Beauty'. Although aware (*Sonnet 62*) that the genius of his own generation is scientific, and that his pursuit of 'beauty' and 'rhyme' may be a lonely one, Bridges is determined to persist :

I will be what God made me, nor protest  
Against the bent of genius in my time.

Throughout the sequence he comments on his own poetry,

suggesting at times that he has now mastered his difficult art (*Sonnet 1*), but frequently he is more diffident and conscious of an inadequate reception (*Sonnet 51*).

Despite the power of individual sonnets, and the variety of mood, the sequence has an air of incompleteness when compared with either *Modern Love* or *The House of Life*. Bridges is far more conscious than either Meredith or Rossetti of the Elizabethan tradition, and the sequence of mood is less emphasized. Superficially, the philosophy seems more loosely defined, though Bridges is already suggesting within *The Growth of Love* the view of life which finally he stated explicitly in *The Testament of Beauty*.

Two collections of miscellaneous lyrics, *New Poems* (1899) and *Later Poems* (1912), re-affirm some of the themes found in *The Growth of Love*. *New Poems* opens with a number of Victorian eclogues, a form which Bridges had praised in his essay on poetic diction.<sup>18</sup> Among them is his account of the funeral of Giovanni Duprè, who followed Beauty and not ambition, and so deserved burial with the great of the Earth :

And number'd with the saints, not among them  
Who painted saints.

The volume has a share of nature poems and elegies, including the choric poem, *The South Wind*. The *Later Poems* is a collection of pieces written between 1903-1911; they are frequently poems on persons, in which the ode has been called on to add dignity to an ephemeral incident. Outstanding is the *Ode to Music, Henry Purcell*, and here Bridges returns to the philosophy of Beauty which he has already been formulating :

All mankind by Love shall be banded  
To combat Evil, the many-handed :  
For the spirit of man on beauty feedeth.

From 1903 to 1909, and later, though with less persistence, Robert Bridges engaged in experiments in classical prosody. They seem a diversion from his main purposes, a triumph of the prosodic over poetic interests, and yet they leave an important

trace upon the form of his later work. In 1887 Canon Beeching had asked him to write some notes on Milton's prosody for an edition of *Paradise Lost* (1893); later, these were published separately and a keen controversy followed (1901).<sup>19</sup> In this study he was led to define the nature of quantitative and accentual verse in English. These critical works already approached the problems of classical prosody, and in 1901 they were supplemented by *Classical Metres in English Verse*, a volume by Bridges's friend William Johnson Stone. On Stone's early death Bridges felt a personal obligation to test and to expound his theories; he wrote a number of critical papers, and experimented, with *Epistles*,<sup>20</sup> in classical prosody. Stone had attempted to 'think in quantities' and to reduce the English language to a quantitative system, based on English sounds, that should be free from false analogies with classical prosody. Bridges found during his experiments that he had to modify the value which Stone gave to some syllables,<sup>21</sup> but he retains Stone's purpose of constructing English quantitative verse from English sound lengths with as little arbitrary adjustment as was possible. Bridges once wrote, though he did not use the words in this context, that, 'when one is considering prosody and principles of rhythm, it is necessary to attend to that only'. The experiments in classical prosody are mainly of interest as prosody: their poetic interest is certainly subordinate. Nor do they achieve success in a field where much poetic ingenuity has been spent since the sixteenth century. It would appear from Bridges's verses that where the line's movement depends on length only, its rhythm is too indefinite to impress the ear. Where length combines with stress, the rhythmic movement is over-emphasized and mechanical. Nor do the variations gained largely from his study of Miltonic elision serve to free the verse from these embarrassments which arise from the nature of the language. But despite Bridges's preoccupation with technical ingenuity, he makes important developments of his thought in these poems. By choosing the epistle as his form, he allows a freer conversational approach to themes which have only been implied in the lyrical poems. So in *Wintry Delights* he is led to anticipate *The Testament of Beauty* in his discussion of contemporary thought:

Boldly a new science of MAN, from dreamy scholastic  
 Imprisoning set free, and inveterate divination,  
 Into the light of truth, to the touch of history and fact.

In the second and more elaborate epistle, *To a Socialist in London*, his expression is more crabbed; he expounds a sort of spiritual *laissez-faire* which is not unsavoured with self-complacency. Yet it is of interest that he employs here the fable of the bees, which is used later in a memorable passage of *The Testament of Beauty*. *Ibant Obscuri* (1909),<sup>22</sup> a later experiment, was an attempt to make a line for line paraphrase from the *Aeneid*, Book VI. Here more than in the original pieces the restrictions under which he works become apparent, and this is confirmed by his rendering into alcaics of Blake's *Evening*. Bridges, it must be remembered, had never suggested that English poetry should be written in classical prosody; he wished merely to show that it could be so written. Further, the results of his experiments are not to be judged in themselves but from the indirect results which they have upon his later verse: 'The experiments which I have made reveal a vast unexplored field of delicate and expressive rhythms hitherto unknown in our poetry.' Some of those rhythms he explores in the unrhymed verse of his later years.

At a long distance from these earlier works there follow two volumes of lyrics. *October* (1920) contained, apart from lyrics written in 1913, a number of war poems, marked by an unhappy stridency of mood. *New Verse* (1921) was a more legitimate successor to the early work. Bridges's own division of the volume is prosodic: in one division he places a few more quantitative poems, and in another pieces in 'recognizable old styles': a third is occupied with accentual measures which had attracted him from the earliest days of his verse writing; the most important is filled with poems written in a manner which he describes as 'Neo-Miltonic syllabics. It pretends to offer their true desideratum to the advocates of Free Verse.' He expressed a similar faith in this development of 'Milton's inventions in syllabic verse' in his essay on *vers libres*, entitled *Humdrum and Harum-Scarum* (1922). This new form was presented in lyric in *Cheddar Pinks*, and in longer discursive pieces, notably *Kate's Mother*. Its importance lies in the fact

that it was this measure, renamed as 'loose alexandrines', that Bridges employed in *The Testament of Beauty*.

It is significant that these experiments coincide with his final edition of *Milton's Prosody* (1921). He had been attracted by Milton's free use of the alexandrine in the lyrical parts of *Samson Agonistes*. He was equally impressed by the methods of inversion and elision with which Milton had varied the blank verse of *Paradise Lost*. Further, his edition of the poems of Gerard Manley Hopkins (1918) had shown his familiarity with Hopkins's system of counterpointed rhythm: the licence by which varied feet could be introduced somewhat freely upon a basic pattern. From a combination of these experiments he evolved a verse freer than Milton would have allowed, and based on a line of five or of six stresses. In speaking of the dactylic variations which Milton had introduced into his line, he wrote, 'Milton was, therefore, not inventing anything new or unheard, but seeking rather to make a good use of natural English stress rhythms, without falling into their singsong, or setting all his verse to dance. And it should now be clear to the reader by what means he did this.'<sup>23</sup> It may not be equally clear how Bridges attained his effects. He used considerable licence in the position of the stress and in the number of syllables; yet his long experience in prosodic experiments, both in stress rhythms and in quantitative verse, had trained his ear to a subtle appreciation of what could be attained with English sounds. In the longer, discursive pieces of 1921 he does not seem to have realized the full possibilities of his discovery; for that he has to wait until *The Testament of Beauty*. The invention of these 'loose alexandrines' was the final reward of his long discipleship in prosody; he found a new medium; he employed it worthily, and it was a medium that could be used only by one who had pursued closely the rhythms of the language. Before *The Testament* itself can be approached, Bridges's narrative and dramatic works must be examined.

In 1885 there appeared two versions of Apuleius's rendering of the Cupid and Psyche myth; Walter Pater embedded a prose version as an episode in *Marius the Epicurean*, while Bridges gave a stanzaic rendering in *Eros and Psyche*. Both had felt the strangeness that a story of Greek form and delicacy

should exist in the macabre surroundings of *The Golden Ass*, and they contrived to recover some of that Greek quality in their own versions. Pater, writing of the episode's place in the story, had commented : ' Amid its mockeries, its coarse though genuine humanity, its burlesque horrors, came the tale of Cupid and Psyche, full of brilliant, lifelike situations, *speciosa in locis* ', and so Bridges, emphasizing still more its Greek spirit, wrote Eros for Cupid,

Eros, the ever young, who only grew  
In mischief, and was Cupid named anew  
In westering aftertime of latin lore.

Throughout the poem, not only by its values but in frequent reference to other Greek myths, he keeps prominent this intention. Nor in choosing this legend could he have been unmindful that this was a story used by Morris in *The Earthly Paradise* : antagonism to Pre-Raphaelite art may have strengthened his intention of giving to his version a precision which Morris with his genially easy story-telling did not cultivate. He chose a measure which Morris had frequently used, the rime royal, though by changing the rhyme scheme and so avoiding the final couplet, he modifies its effect. Further, it may not be fanciful to remember that, while the setting of *The Earthly Paradise* is arranged for two stories for each month Bridges divides his theme into months and apportions one stanza for each day of the month. Although he seems to have fixed himself with fetters he moves easily, but when in one stanza he inserts an acrostic on Purcell's name, the suggestion arises that dexterity has itself grown wanton.

Bridges brought his own values and emphasis to the poem. Their origin is to be sought in Keats's *Ode to Psyche*, a motto from which was quoted on the title-page. For Keats, the legend has transformed itself into a symbol of all that beauty allied to love could convey to the mind. Bridges, already attracted to that theme, pursues it through the legend :

And if some beauteous things,—whose heavenly worth  
And function overpass our mortal sense,—  
Lie waste and unregarded on the earth  
By reason of our gross intelligence,

These are not vain, because in nature's scheme  
It lives that we shall grow from dream to dream  
In time to gather an enchantment thence.

This emphasis appears variously in the poem, both in his portrayal of Cupid and in the philosophical implication of the closing stanzas. Frequently it is relaxed so that the legend may be developed in picturesque detail, but it returns, as a recurrent and governing motive. His discipline over incident, and the power of expressing his own imagination while retaining good faith with the myth, leads to a regret that he did not exploit further the narrative power which he so obviously possessed.

Of the dramas, two are closely related to his lyrical work, *Prometheus the Firegiver* (1883) and *Demeter* (1905). *Prometheus*, the earliest of the dramatic pieces, is described by Bridges as 'a mask in the Greek manner'. Keeping to the form of Greek tragedy, he conveys the Prometheus myth with a lyrical emphasis in the commentary. The dramatic speeches are in blank verse, marked with some Miltonic features, while the theme has suggestions of Satan's conflict in *Paradise Lost*: 'Could I but win this world from Zeus for mine.' In the first part Prometheus is the spokesman of Bridges's philosophy. He is made to describe that searching for beauty which distinguishes the 'spirit of man' from the rest of creation:

That spirit which lives in each and will not die,  
That wooeth beauty, and for all good things  
Urgeth a voice, or in still passion sigheth,  
And where he loveth draweth the heart after him.

Thus in the first part one is led to imagine that Bridges, following Shelley, is about to re-fashion the myth for his own symbolic purposes. The second part marks, however, a retreat from this intention, and falling back on the mere recountal of the myth, he allows Prometheus, with Aeschylean precedent, to describe the wanderings of Io. Despite this sense of diminution of poetic purpose, Bridges's earliest essay in dramatic form is possibly his most successful. *Demeter* (1905), 'written for the Ladies at Somerville College and acted by them at the inauguration of their new building in 1904', is a slighter



exercise in the same manner. Here blank verse is varied with elaborate choral movement, including the memorable chorus of the Oceanides ('Gay and lovely is earth, man's decorate dwelling'). Its sequence of thought is not unlike that found in *Prometheus*; it opens with philosophy, a discussion on the place of wisdom and joy, of love and passion in life. This recedes in Acts II and III to make room for simple, dramatic elements, the description of Demeter's grief, and a recounting of Persephone's lovely legend. Only as the play closes does Bridges return to the contemplation of the symbolic implications of the myth. Again he seems uncertain of his poetic purpose; at times he would appear prepared to make *Comus* his model and subdue considerations of drama and myth to abstract discussion. He has not the courage to do this consistently, and he is content that some movement in the story shall woo him away from his philosophic purposes. Both the pieces seem therefore to be poetic compromises, in which unity of intention has not been fully conceived. Yet, unlike the other dramas, they seem closely related to the lyrical poetry.

In the later nineteenth century blank verse drama continued to attract a number of poets who had little knowledge or aptitude for the stage. The narrative power which Bridges had shown in *Eros and Psyche* he refrained from developing, while the dramatic gift which he possessed but fitfully he exercised with persistence. Though his pieces are but dubiously successful as dramas, they show an independence in thought and structure. *Nero*, a work in two parts, which covers the death of Agrippina, the conspiracy of Piso, and the death of Seneca, marks Bridges's dramatic discipleship. The work is inconclusive, and over-elaborated, with a multiplicity of characters and themes and a discursive handling of the speeches. If tragic values prevail, the play must conclude with Nero's death; instead, we see merely the monotonous extinction of his opponents. If the drama is philosophical, Nero's view of life must be presented and confronted with others that conflict with it. Occasionally this appears as Bridges's intention, but more frequently it is lost in the *mêlée* of characters and intrigue. Nero frequently suggests that his purpose is to extend indefinitely the material resources of human enjoyment; man 'wounds his happiness against a cage of his own making'.

In the second part he asserts the doctrine in a more aggressive form :

I believe,  
That no man in the world worth calling man  
Is what philosophers term pure and good ;—  
Nor woman either. All would gratify  
The strong desires of nature, and all shall,  
While I am emperor.

Nero's sensual hedonism is not consistently opposed until the second part, when Seneca and the Christians affirm a spiritual conception of life and after-life. Bridges admitted that he was only experimenting in this play. Its length and diffuseness make it impossible for the stage, but it has excellent moments, such as the death of Seneca and the feast which precedes the death of Britannicus. The characterization is flat. Bridges seems a little embarrassed by the unsavouriness of Nero, but he succeeds with Petronius, who, knowing wisdom, does not seek it, and he converts him into the most lifelike portrait in the play. In *The Feast of Bacchus* he experimented in Latin comedy, a parents and children theme, in the Terentian manner. Prosodically the play has interest ; it is described as ' a line of six stresses, written according to rules of English rhythm '. The characteristic movement of the verses can be seen in the following lines :

I came upon her hard at work at her tapestry,  
Dressed in a common gown : no gold about her ; none  
Of the rouge and powder, that women bedaub their faces with.

This verse, though difficult to adjust to the necessities of drama, is Bridges's skilful attempt to adapt the Latin *senarius* of Plautus to English verse. The line has a particular interest from its similarity to the form of ' loose alexandrines ' which Bridges developed in his later work.

Of the remaining plays, three owe their origin to Bridges's study of Calderon. *Achilles in Scyros*, though possessing a prologue, chorus, and other appurtenances of classical drama, is romantic in form, with eavesdropping, hiding, and with Achilles disguised as a maiden. Little emphasis is given to character, but, as in the earlier plays, room is found for some discursive commentary. Its main success lies in the lyrical

power and the movement of thought in the choruses. *The Christian Captives* gives fresh treatment to a situation suggested by Calderon's *El Principe Constante*, and portrays the love of Almeh, daughter of the king of Fez, for Ferdinand the Christian prince of Portugal. In form, the tragedy is, as Bridges himself suggested, 'mixed'; its values of honour and love could consort with those of heroic drama, yet the play ends more strenuously than heroic drama would permit in the death of the main protagonists. A chorus is retained and used generously but little else belongs to classical tradition. *The Humours of the Court*, in which Bridges used suggestions from Calderon and Lope de Vega, is, apart from *The Feast of Bacchus*, his only experiment in comedy. Possibly the most actable of the plays, it preserves a certain consistent sophistication of sentiment which befits its artificiality of situation. It is as if one of Shakespeare's romantic comedies had dropped its coarseness and farce, and had been crossed with a play of romantic adventure. The result is a brave and graceful incredibility, which has the honesty never to pose as reality. *Palicio*, the third play which shows the influence of Calderon, owes nothing directly to any Spanish play. It has, however, a Spanish theme, and Palicio himself, the Sicilian brigand who marries Margaret, sister of the Chief Justiciary of Sicily, belongs to the romantic 'cloak-and-sword' tradition of Spanish drama.

*The Return of Ulysses* separates itself from the other plays in that it recasts some of the chief scenes in Homer's *Odyssey* into dramatic form. The material, as Bridges seems to have suspected, was too diffuse for dramatic action, nor did he contrive to govern its movement with any adequate conflict. It is difficult to see what he has gained by imposing dramatic form on such obviously narrative texture. He employs the chorus from classical tragedy and uses Athene as prologue, but the values of the play and its loose episodic character have little in common with classical drama.

Despite the outstanding quality of individual passages, his dramas remain as poetic exercises. The interests of his mind, philosophical, prosodic, and descriptive found no outlet, and to replace them he attempted to manufacture an attachment for intrigue, conspiracy, and human passion. His very quality as a poet exists in his aloofness from this blood and stress; he

had announced frequently in his lyrical poetry such a retreat, but the desire to write drama pursued him into his quietude and perplexed his poetic purposes for almost a decade. All that is good within the dramas seem related to his philosophical and lyrical interests, such as the comments in *Nero* and the choruses in *Achilles in Scyros*.

In 1929 Bridges published *The Testament of Beauty*.<sup>24</sup> The poem presents two preliminary difficulties to the reader who meets Bridges's poetry here for the first time: its reformed spelling troubles the eye, even if it does not hold up the mind, while the metre is an extended use of the loose alexandrines which Bridges had employed already in 1921,

'wherein so many strange verses amalgamate  
on the secure bedrock of Milton's prosody.'<sup>25</sup>

The *Testament* is a confession of faith, expressed with sufficient consistency of argument to elevate it into philosophy, and diversified with numerous illustrations and episodes. Its thought develops naturally from the earlier poems. Bridges, now an old man, experiences a 're-awakening to a fresh initiation of life', and this leads him to express his philosophy in verse. Modifying Plato's image in the *Phaedrus*, he portrays man's two main instincts, Selfhood and Breed, as two steeds, controlled by Reason, the charioteer. Each of these instincts arises from an impulse shared by all living things, the desire to live and the desire to propagate. Neither impulse is evil, yet uncontrolled by Reason they become cruel and wasteful. Reason by itself can achieve little; its power arises only when it comes into contact with these two instincts. So Selfhood, with Reason's control, develops the altruism of motherhood, which even animals possess. Further, it can proceed to the higher aim of life, the fullest development of individual worth:

our great endeavour  
is spiritual attainment, individual worth  
at all cost to be sought and at all cost pursued.

Bridges is led here, partly by a bias against political socialism, to deprecate Plato's conception of a communal Utopia and to ridicule the mechanized industry of the beehive as an ideal

for human society. Full human individuality can be attained when man aided by Reason perceives Beauty. Similarly, Breed which begins as propagation is led by the same qualities into love. Through Art, man figures out this Beauty which is his highest attribute. Like Selfhood and Breed, Art is present everywhere in some form in the living world, in the song of birds and in flowers and the dance of animals ; but in man Art becomes that enlarged perception of Beauty which is an approach to a contact with God :

Beauty, the eternal Spouse of the Wisdom of God  
and Angel of his Presence thru' all creation.

Reason is, thus, the great servant of man, and from Reason arises Duty. Some would imagine that Duty is externally imposed on life, but to Bridges, as to Wordsworth, Duty is a natural outcome from Nature. The conception of Duty changes with man's knowledge, and so develops his closer interpretation of Beauty. To make Reason master of man is to lose the contact with Nature and the instincts, from which man's highest achievement arises, go astray. Nor is Reason or Duty opposed to Pleasure, unless Pleasure becomes an end in itself out of contact with Nature and Beauty. Bridges, while he does not ignore the problem of evil, does not attempt to solve it. Man, he suggests, is not equipped to solve the eternal problem of why life is ; he can only approach through the instincts controlled by Reason to a deeper conception of what life may be. Error, perversion, and retrogression are for ever the results of false relation to Nature. The true approach to life as he outlines it rests in Faith :

But heav'nward tho' the chariot be already mounted,  
'tis Faith alone can keep the charioteer in heart.

Of all the activities that have been named evil, war is one of the most perplexing, for war 'is like unto virtue, but not virtue itself'. War is closely allied to Selfhood, and seems in the child a natural instinct, but it has developed to loathsomeness and leads to a sickness of spirit. Despite the havoc of the European War and the troubled condition of the peoples at its close, Bridges is not led away from his Faith that man

has the possibility of expressing in life, through instinct and Reason, the love that is God. Beauty is the perception of that love, and so Beauty therefore becomes the central doctrine of this Testament and in a number of passages its precise interpretation is defined :

*What is Beauty ? saith my sufferings then.*—I answer  
the lover and poet in my loose alexandrines :  
Beauty is the highest of all these occult influences,  
the quality of appearances that thru' the sense  
wakeneth spiritual emotion in the mind of man :  
And Art, as it createth new forms of beauty,  
awakeneth new ideas that advance the spirit  
in the life of Reason to the wisdom of God.

Such in barest outline is Bridges's argument. Its inadequacies are more obvious in a prose summary than when expressed persuasively with a wealth of illustration and modification in the poem itself. Despite the recognition of evil, Bridges may be felt to dismiss the problem too facilely. He has none of Browning's preoccupation with evil, and one feels that his own neglect of Browning's poetry was his retreat from the nauseating, obscene thing that was there ever dangling before his eyes. Nor is his conception of life as the development of the worth of the individual fully related to spiritual altruism ; it approaches at times to a refined egoism not uncoloured by his obvious antipathy to political socialism. His faith in the Universe is asserted rather than justified, nor is its Divine origin reconciled to the instinct of cruelty in all living things. This philosophy is open at places to attack, but the greatness of his achievement as a philosophical poet remains. Alone of the poets of the period he has incorporated into a single poem, not merely a philosophy, but a system of aesthetic, and he has related these to contemporary knowledge of science, of evolution, and of history. He has come back to the problems which perplex Tennyson in *In Memoriam*, Browning in *Christmas-Eve and Easter-Day*, and Arnold in *Rugby Chapel* ; he has united the poetry of the early and the late nineteenth century. Unlike the earlier poets, he is not perplexed by doubt : his philosophy arises from a certainty of faith which is combined with a serenity of mood. Tennyson in *In Memoriam*,

despite his spiritual self-torturing, offers the closest parallel. The two poems arise from a restatement of a faith after the endurance of a personal grief : this motive is not as emphasized in Bridges, yet it occurs clearly at the close :

'Twas at sunset that I, fleeing to hide my soul  
in refuge of beauty from a mortal distress,  
walk'd alone with the Muse in her garden of thought.

Bridges is much more comprehensive in his approach than Tennyson, and he has absorbed the knowledge which seventy years of investigation in science had made available. He fails to emphasize as ruthlessly as did Tennyson the cruelty of the struggle for existence, but he shows, as Tennyson failed to do, how the new knowledge of the physical world, which the nineteenth century had made available, could be reconciled to a philosophy of art in which religious conceptions were dominant. Of the poets of the later nineteenth century the two who approach his purposes most closely are Meredith and Hardy. Meredith, developing a tortuous vocabulary of his own, had evolved in poetry a system of conduct which embraced a recognition of man's contact with the animal world. Hardy, like Bridges, had become aware of evolution, but that recognition had moved his creative vision to emphasize the cruelty and ruthlessness of life and to express pity for all living things which suffered and endured it. Bridges returned in the third decade of the twentieth century, when many minds were filled with misgivings that amounted to despair, and reasserted that faith in abstract virtues, in Beauty and Goodness, which underlies so much Victorian poetry. Strange as it may seem, he gained a far wider recognition for this service than for any other work which he had achieved. In an age that was morbidly distrustful of idealism he reasserted the place of Beauty and Love in experience and in philosophy.

A poem cannot live by philosophical argument alone, and Bridges has used all his long-gathered resources as a poet to give *The Testament* an imaginative life. The ease with which he employs his ' loose alexandrines ' suggests that he is working in a medium as comprehensive as prose and yet possessing that dexterity of phrase, harmony in numbers, and power of gathering diversity into a single compelling impression which

belong to poetry. His vocabulary has such a happy combination of the familiar and the remote that he can describe wireless and communal nurseries without intruding any quaintness into the movement of his verses. The theme necessitates that his vocabulary should at times give to abstract concepts a precise value, and sometimes an inevitable discursiveness intrudes as if this were not a poem but a poetical lecture. Such slackening of texture is rare and serves only to show how he has conquered these difficulties in the major part of the poem. He has coloured his diction with a far more generous employment of imagery than he had previously permitted, and keen, well-discovered phrases flash in and out of the argument, lighting it with a warm and romantic quality which in the earlier years of his poetic asceticism he had denied himself.

Much of the imaginative strength of the poem lies in its descriptions and episodic passages. Bridges's problem was not unlike that of Milton in *Paradise Lost*: he had brought wide human interests into a theme which did not seem obviously to allow of them. He may have had Milton's method in mind when he sought in history, the sciences, and the arts for illustrations, and endowed them with a glamour that gives them value quite apart from the argument which they expound: so the descriptions of nature and of music; the life of St. Francis and 'his hymn in honour of God'; the arts of Greece and of the coming of Jesus; the account of the Crusades and of the beginnings of modern poetry; the brilliant anatomy of the pleasures of eating; the summary of the Orient's absorption of Western science; the excavators amid prehistoric tombs in Mesopotamia, where the bones of the king's servants and his mistresses were found heaped around the grave. Some of these have but a slender contact with the argument; so the poetical essay on 'Pleasure in Food' is, on Bridges's own confession, a digression, and is elaborated for its own delight, while the passage on Mesopotamian exploration, perhaps the most brilliant in the whole poem, is but dimly related to the attack on socialism which is its alleged purpose. Yet it is these very passages, and others such as the opening nature scene, and the discussion on asceticism arising from the refusal of a peach by Gerard Manley Hopkins that give the poem its ultimately personal quality. Bridges is expounding his own faith in the



terms of his own long-gathered studies of the sciences of human life. Though in form and vocabulary the poem stands apart from the poetry of the period, it is intimately associated with the motives from which Victorian poetry arises. It is with *The Testament of Beauty* that nineteenth century poetry comes to an end.

1. *Poems* (London, 1909), with a memoir by Robert Bridges. *Last Poems* (London, 1905), preface by Mary Coleridge.

2. *Gathered Leaves* (London, 1910), edited with a memoir by Edith Sichel and with extracts from the *Letters and Diaries, Mary Coleridge*; Robert Bridges, *Cornhill* (London, May 1907); *Poems* (London, 1907), with a preface by Sir Henry Newbolt.

3. The name is taken from George Macdonald's romance, *Phantastes*.

4. *Poems* (1918), edited, with an introduction and notes, by Robert Bridges; a second and enlarged edition appeared in 1930, with additional introductory matter by Charles Williams. G. M. Hopkins, G. F. Lahey (1930), is a sympathetic study.

5. Notably in *Poets of the Century*, Miles (London, 1894).

6. Also printed in the second edition of *Poems* (loc. cit. in 4).

7. The date of the manuscript is 1871; but see Bridges, loc. cit. in 4, p. 101.

8. Bridges, loc. cit. in 4, p. 102.

9. Bridges, loc. cit. in 4.

10. Bridges, loc. cit. in 4, p. 97.

11. Coventry Patmore, who knew Hopkins from 1883, had written in 1878 his strange essay on *English Metrical Law*; the dates preclude any possibility of contact in prosodic discussion, but the two systems possess parallels.

12. See Charles Williams's preface to *Poems* (loc. cit. in 4).

13. Biographical notes are prefixed to *Notes on the Testament of Beauty* (1931), Nowell C. Smith, and I am indebted to him for permission to quote these; in *The Pelican Record* (Oxford, June 1930), there is a brief article by Oliver Elton; *Robert Bridges* (1914), F. E. Brett Young, is a critical study, as is T. M. Kelshall's (1924); the most valuable information on Bridges's mind and critical development is to be found in his own prose essays, and especially in the critical memoirs, *D. M. Dolben* (1911), *G. M. Hopkins* (1918), *Henry Bradley* (1928); see also the collected memoirs in one volume, *Three Friends* (1932). For the bibliography of Bridges see *Bibliographies of Modern Authors*, No. 1 (1921); see also, for critical studies, *Quarterly Review*, July 1913; *Fortnightly Review*, July 1928; on *The Testament of Beauty* there is an important article in *The Hibbert Journal*, April 1930, by E. de Sélincourt, and another study appears in *Poetry and the Criticism of Life*, H. W. Garrod (1931).

14. *Dolben* (loc. cit. in 13), p. xviii.
15. *Collected Essays*, IV (1927, etc.), p. 158; the spelling has been normalized.
16. *Collected Essays*, I (1927, etc.), p. 5.
17. *Henry Bradley* (loc. cit. in 13), p. 34.
18. *Collected Essays*, III (1927, etc.).
19. A much enlarged edition appeared in 1921.
20. *Monthly Review* (London, July 1903); *New Quarterly* (London, January 1909).
21. See *Poetical Works* (Oxford, 1912), p. 410.
22. This was prefaced with an essay on Virgilian hexameters.
23. *Milton's Prosody* (Oxford, 1921), p. 66.
24. See references in 13; I am indebted in my account to Professor de Sélincourt's admirable article.
25. *Poor Poll* (1921).

## CHAPTER XI

LIGHTER VERSE: AUSTIN DOBSON; EDMUND GOSSE;  
ANDREW LANG. COMIC AND NONSENSE VERSE:  
EDWARD LEAR; 'LEWIS CARROLL'; WILLIAM  
SCHWENCK GILBERT; CHARLES STUART CALVERLEY;  
JAMES KENNETH STEPHEN

THROUGHOUT English literature there has persisted as a graceful accompaniment to serious poetry a tradition of lighter verse. It varies in motive from comic verse, through epigram and light satire, to poems, brief and graciously conceited, which comment on life wistfully, but without emphasis. At its best, as it appears in Herrick, or some of the Restoration lyrists, or Prior, it has the illimitable quality of great imaginative work. The main tendency of poetry in the romantic period and in the nineteenth century leads away from any intrusion of the trivial, and yet lighter verse holds its place. Isaac Disraeli, writing in 1796, had made a plea for a poetry not profound in content but full of the graces, 'refined, melodious and glowing', and he had quoted Pliny's praise of *poésies légères*: 'It is surprising how much the mind is entertained and enlivened by these little poetical compositions as they turn upon subjects of gallantry, satire, tenderness, politeness and every thing, in short, that concerns life, and the affairs of the world.'<sup>1</sup> If lighter verse may be interpreted through Disraeli's generous formula the first half of the century has a number of examples from the work of Thomas Hood (1799-1845) and Winthrop Mackworth Praed (1802-1839), to *The Ingoldsby Legends* (1840) of Richard Harris Barham (1788-1845), and the *Bon Gaultier Book of Ballads* (1849) which William Edmondstoune Aytoun (1813-1865) wrote with Theodore Martin, and the miscellaneous light verse of Thackeray.

After 1850 light verse of diverse forms occupies a large place in poetic production, though its existence is frequently forgotten by those who generalize on Victorian taste. It varies in character, and frequently the light-verse writer is capable of

more solemn endeavour : Andrew Lang shows, as Thomas Hood did earlier, that humour was but one aspect of his keenly perceptive mind. Many of the major writers of the century allow themselves occasionally to turn to 'these little poetical compositions'; even Tennyson could trifle at times, and Christina Rossetti's *Sing-Song* is a notable example of light verse from a writer whose mind dwelt frequently amid shadows. Other writers, and they are many in the second half of the century, found in lighter verse their main achievement. In this chapter such writers are considered and their serious work is noticed along with the lighter.

It is difficult to define closely the content of all that can be contained under the term 'lighter' verse. If the Aristotelian method of producing the specimens be allowed, the poems in Frederick Locker's *Lyra Elegantiarum* (1867) might be quoted, and with them the poems in Locker's own successful volume of *London Lyrics* (1857). Locker, in a preface to his anthology, attempted a definition which is possibly as precise as the miscellaneous character of the material will allow : 'Genuine *vers de société* and *vers d'occasion* should be short, elegant, refined, and fanciful, not seldom distinguished by chastened sentiment, and often playful. The tone should not be pitched high ; it should be idiomatic, and rather in the conversational key : the rhythm should be crisp and sparkling, and the rhyme frequent and never forced, while the entire poem should be marked by tasteful moderation, high finish and completeness ; for, however trivial the subject-matter may be, indeed rather in proportion to its triviality, subordination to the rules of composition and perfection of execution should be strictly enforced.'

Among the great diversity of lighter-verse writers one group gains unity in attempting to achieve Locker's requirement of 'perfection of execution', by using the more elaborate forms of French verse, *rondel*, *rondeau*, *triolet*, *villanelle*, *ballade*, and *chant royal*. This movement would appear to owe its origin to a hand-book on prosody, *Petit Traité de la Poésie Française*, published in 1872 by Théodore de Banville. His purpose was to deplore that limiting of verse forms which he considered to have had an enervating influence on French poetry for two centuries : 'la poésie française à partir du xvii<sup>e</sup> siècle, a été

non seulement réduite en esclavage mais tuée, embaumée, et momifiée.' He invited poets, before inventing new forms or breaking with all tradition, to attempt to convey their sentiments in some of the older and more complex French measures. Théodore de Banville's treatise was read in England by a group of writers and critics, whose interest lay not in his precise thesis, but in the possibility of applying to English poetry the older French forms which he analysed. Early in the field was Edmund Gosse, then a young critic, who wrote in *The Cornhill*, July 1877, an article on *A Plea for certain exotic forms of verse*. Much of this article is a summary of Théodore de Banville's analysis of French forms,<sup>2</sup> but it is accompanied by the plea that these forms should be used in English. Gosse suggests that further imitation of Tennyson and Browning would be unprofitable, while the Pre-Raphaelites had already shown what could be gained by an extension of form: 'The actual movement of the time,' he writes, 'appears certainly to be in the direction of increased variety and richness of rhyme, elasticity of verse, and strength of form. The invertebrate rhapsodies of Sydney Dobell, so amazing in their beauty of detail and total absence of style, are now impossible. We may lack his inspiration and his insight, but we understand far better than he the workmanship of the art of verse.' He emphasizes the kinship of poetry with art rather than with philosophy, and quotes as the aim of poetry, the sentiment in Alfred de Musset's lines:

D'un sourire, d'un mot, d'un soupir, d'un regard  
Faire un travail exquis.

Gosse's article was followed in the next year (1878) by a short essay by Austin Dobson on *Some Foreign Forms of Verse*,<sup>3</sup> in which the types of verse mentioned by Théodore de Banville are again commended. It would seem unprofitable to analyse closely the sequence in which these forms came into English, though this was a problem which some of the poets in this group were frequently considering. It is of interest to note that the ballade had already attracted Swinburne by 1866. He used it both then and later, but for his own purposes, and not in the way in which Austin Dobson and Andrew Lang

used it a decade later. Further, the triolet, a favourite with the poets of this group, was used before they employed it by Robert Bridges, who has triolets in *Poems* (1873). Bridges brings the impress of his own high seriousness to this dainty verse pattern, and his work seems to have no contact with the other experiments of the seventies. An anthology, derived from the work of these writers, was issued in 1887, with an introduction by Gleeson White, and there would appear to have been some continued interest in the forms until some of them were used again in the nineties.

One of the earliest and most representative members of the group was Henry Austin Dobson<sup>4</sup> (1840-1921). His grandmother was French, and he was educated in France and Germany, so that his employment of French forms is a natural development. Like Gosse, Lang, and Henley, his main occupation was not poetry. At sixteen he accepted a clerkship in the Board of Trade, and there he remained until 1901. For a time Edmund Gosse was his colleague. Like some others who devoted their life to biography he was sufficiently distrustful of the art to wish that his own life should not be written. His main period of poetical production lies in the years 1864-1885, but he continued to write until his death in 1921. His long retirement was occupied mainly with critical and biographical work. Dobson had been writing in periodicals for almost a decade when his first volume of verse, *Vignettes in Rhyme and Vers de Société*, was published in 1873; *Proverbs in Porcelain* followed in 1877, and *Old-World Idylls* in 1883, mainly a selection from the two earlier volumes; *At the Sign of the Lyre*, in 1885 and in 1897 *Collected Poems*. Finally, a complete edition was issued in 1923; this, unfortunately, rearranged the poems and the sequence of the earlier volumes was lost.<sup>5</sup>

Austin Dobson worked within a narrow range and a chill fell whenever he attempted to pass out to larger endeavour. The occasional elegiac pieces, such as *Before Sedan*, the Spenserians on a classical theme, *The Prayer of the Swine to Circe*, and *Rondeaus of the Great War*, seem all the work of a poet who has lost his way. Within his own domain he rises to a miniature and artificial perfection. There, in his own world, he is master, but one has to examine that world before one can estimate his comparative excellence. Like all successful

light-verse writers he possessed a playfulness in rhythm, with a mastery of complex stanzas, particularly the French forms. With these he constructed a dainty world, into which an element of sentiment is allowed to intrude. If the emotion goes beyond sentiment the poet is flustered and uncertain, and even in sentiment he is in danger ; propriety and sentimentality tempt him away from the game which he is playing. Strangely enough, he is frequently stimulated by an enthusiasm for the eighteenth century, particularly for that courtly eighteenth-century French society, elegant, sophisticated, perfectly mannered, beautiful, cruel, and gracefully immoral. He moves uneasily in this world that he loves, capturing something of its sentiment, but always afraid that he may see or be asked to do something which both he and his Muse would consider improper. It can be seen in *Une Marquise*, where he wins out of the past a delicately contrived portrait, and then ruins it with a blatant moral conclusion disguising itself as satire :

We shall counsel to our Chloë  
 To be rather good than clever ;  
 For we find it hard to smother  
 Just one little thought, Marquise !  
 Wittier perhaps than any other,—  
 You were neither Wife nor Mother,  
‘ Belle Marquise.’

The best of Dobson must be discovered in poems where these alien elements are absent. It can be found in the delightful ballade *On a Fan that Belonged to the Marquise de Pompadour*. Here sentiment and moral comment are reduced to the wistful sense that bright things die, while the ghosts of past elegance move gracefully in the complex stanzas :

Chicken-skin, delicate, white,  
 Painted by Carlo Vanloo,  
 Loves in a riot of light,  
 Roses and vaporous blue ;  
 Hark to the dainty *frou-frou* !  
 Picture above, if you can,  
 Eyes that could melt as the dew,—  
 This was the Pompadour’s fan !

and so to the Envoy :

Where are the secrets it knew ?  
 Weavings of plot and of plan ?  
 But where is the Pompadour, too ?  
*This was the Pompadour's Fan !*

In the same genre are his two 'characters' of *A Gentleman of the Old School* and *A Gentlewoman of the Old School*, and in this verse portraiture he achieved a number of his main successes. The same quality appears in *The Old Sedan Chair*, where the sentiment, obvious but not uninteresting, moves easily in the rhythm of the anapaests. Great poetry can be made out of memories of the past, and from the idea of mortality ; Dobson approaches these themes more lightly, but at times he arouses pathos even though he never penetrates into the heart of things. The narrative poems show the thinness of his content and the narrowness of his governing motives. These features appear even in such a delightful piece as *The Ballad of 'Beau Brocade'*. Dobson prefaces the poem with a quotation from *The Beggar's Opera*, which seems only to emphasize all that was lost between Polly Peachum and Dobson's Dolly.

In many of his poems he attempted the French forms which he had commended in 1878. Theme, for him as for some other members of this school, was frequently merely the material for technical virtuosity. So in his well-known triolet :

Rose kissed me to-day.  
 Will she kiss me to-morrow ?

He was sometimes denied the title of poet, and called 'only a most accomplished writer of verse'.<sup>6</sup> But poetry fulfils itself in many ways, and in that age of sanity, the eighteenth century, to which Dobson was himself so attached, many of his verses would have passed the tests. He is neat, 'correct', too decorous perhaps, but some wistful, shy beauty informs the best of his work.

Sir Edmund Gosse<sup>7</sup> (1849-1928) is more happily to be estimated as a prose writer than a poet. His story of his relationship with his father, *Father and Son*, has a strength to which nothing in his verse approaches. Throughout the greater part



of his life he had official duties to perform which made literature a secondary interest. After a vague general education he came to London when he was seventeen and was appointed to a post in the Cataloguing Room of the British Museum. Later he migrated to the Board of Trade, and finally gravitated to the Librarianship of the House of Lords. He contrived to perform a large amount of literary commentary, and he was among the first in some fields, and fields as wide apart as Restoration comedy and Ibsenite drama. He knew everybody and had an almost unprecedented capacity for gathering acquaintance. It was not strange that poetry, which he had once believed to be his main interest, lingered for the graceful moments of his leisure. As a young man he had sent some of his verses to Swinburne and asked him if he should make poetry a career. Swinburne's answer is one of the best and wisest passages in his whole correspondence. Gosse's verse was contained in the main in four volumes, *On Viol and Flute*, (1873); *New Poems* (1879); *Firdausi in Exile* (1885); *In Russet and Silver* (1894). Already in 1911, when he issues a volume of *Collected Poems*, he comments on these volumes: 'They are almost unknown to readers of the present day, and their titles, which had their moment of notoriety, are, I believe, forgotten.' Gosse's judgment on the early verses of Compton Mackenzie can be justly applied to his own work: 'Your verses are highly accomplished and full of delicate grace, but they are lacking in temperament. There I miss a vocation.'<sup>8</sup> Added to this, one may place George Moore's opinion that Gosse was deficient in the use of idiom. His one ambitious piece was a narrative poem in an octave stanza, *Firdausi in Exile*. He omits the more piquant details of the Persian epic poet's exciting career, and so strains the stanza and diffuses the narrative movement that the poem, while retaining the minor virtue of coherence, lacks unity. His poems in French forms hold a place in a minor poetic movement; his themes are more serious than those of Dobson, but their success is hindered by a turgid vocabulary. In a few poems a keener sensibility is quickened by a desire to escape the sophisticated world, of books, and criticism, and towns; this romantic nostalgia for simplicity and nature can be found in *Philomel in London*, and again in *A Winter Night's Dream*,

Dreary seems the task assigned me,  
Dull the play ;  
I would fain leave both behind me,  
Steal away  
Where no hopes nor cares could find me  
Night or day.

Of far greater poetic accomplishment is the work of Andrew Lang <sup>9</sup> (1844-1912). Versatility in the arts, and still more in the world of scholarship, is always suspect, and doubly so when combined with the gentle vice of self-disparagement. Lang worked in a number of fields, and belittled his own work in all of them. Educated at St. Andrews and Oxford, with a brief interlude at Glasgow, he was elected to a Fellowship at Merton College and could have begun an academic life under those favoured auspices. He chose instead to be a journalist in London. He wrote an incredibly large number of books, and many of them memorable ones ; Scottish history, folk-lore and mythology, fairy-tales, novels, primitive religions, all occupied him. He was a Greek scholar, and he had a share in producing the most serviceable prose translation of Homer. In such a life there would seem to be little room for poetry, and Lang himself in his later years gave the impression that he had written little, and that not of much consequence. His published work, both in quality and variety, denies such disparagement. His earliest volume was *Ballads and Lyrics of Old France* (1872) ; *xxii Ballades in Blue China* followed in 1880, and *xxxii Ballades* in 1881 ; *Helen of Troy* (1882) ; *Rhymes à la Mode* (1885) ; *Grass of Parnassus* (1888) ; *Ballads of Books* (1888) ; *Ban and Arrière Ban* (1894). Apart from these and other volumes Lang wrote a large number of periodical pieces. His verse was collected in a four-volume edition in 1923, edited by Mrs. Andrew Lang ; unfortunately, but perhaps inevitably, she re-grouped the poems so that the sequence of the earlier volumes has been lost, and with less excuse she omits a number of the shorter poems.<sup>10</sup> The omissions include Lang's translation of Gérard de Nerval's sonnet *El Desdichado*, which had first appeared in *Letters on Literature* (1889). Nothing in Lang's work shows his sensibility and skill more keenly than this neglected poem :

I am that dark, that disinherited,  
 That all dishonoured Prince of Aquitaine,  
 The Star upon my scutcheon long hath fled ;  
 A black sun on my lute doth yet remain !  
 Oh, thou that didst console me not in vain,  
 Within the tomb, among the midnight dead,  
 Show me Italian seas, and blossoms wed,  
 The rose, the vine-leaf, and the golden grain.

Say, am I Love or Phoebus ? have I been  
 Or Lusignan or Biron ? By a Queen  
 Caressed within the Mermaid's haunt I lay  
 And twice I crossed the unpermitted stream,  
 And touched on Orpheus' lyre as in a dream,  
 Sighs of a Saint and laughter of a Fay !

His first volume, *Ballads and Lyrics of Old France* (1872), contains translations from French poetry, beginning with Charles d'Orléans and continuing to Victor Hugo ; he is already gaining contact with some of the French forms which Gosse and Dobson extol later in the same decade. The most ambitious of the original poems is a lyrical sequence, *Hesperothen*. Greek in theme and allegorical in intention, it describes the land of Phæacia, by which is to be understood ' the place of Art and of fair Pleasures '. Lang, a student of the Pre-Raphaelite poets, is influenced here by Swinburne, and Swinburnian domination leaves little room for independence :

The languid sunset, mother of roses,  
 Lingers, a light on the magic seas ;  
 The wide fire flames, as a flower uncloses,  
 Heavy with odour, and loose to the breeze.

Such verses are too full of echoes, and yet Lang has conveyed his theme and a mood of ' sweet melancholy ' has been brought to dwell in this poem. The volume also contains two poems of places, *Twilight on Tweed* and *A Sunset on Yarrow*, where, he writes a little too easily in a genre to which he paid much attention later.

There followed in 1880 and 1881 his collections of *Ballades in Blue China*. He is here in contact with the movement to which Gosse and Dobson gave critical impetus : one of his ballades is a translation from Théodore de Banville, and many

of them are exercises in poetical lightness. Lang retains a variety of mood: the *Ballade of Sleep*, which opens,

The hours are passing slow,  
I hear their weary tread,

adapts a serious theme adequately to a ballade of six-syllable lines; in *Ballade of Autumn* he traffics more safely with sentiment than Dobson ever did; while *Ballade to Theocritus*, in *Winter* recaptures that mood of wistful melancholy which has already appeared in his verse.

*Helen of Troy* (1882) shows clearly that he is continuing the ambitious endeavour first apparent in *Hesperothen*. *Helen* is a narrative poem in an octave stanza, influenced both prosodically and in its narrative emphasis by William Morris. The verse varies in quality, but the theme is vividly portrayed and the detail contrived with keen dramatic sense. So, for instance, when Helen is portrayed as distressed by the strife she has caused, Lang writes:

And once she heard a Trojan woman bless  
The fair-haired Menelaus, her good lord,  
As brave among brave men, not merciless,  
Not swift to slay the captives of his sword,  
Nor wont was he to win the gold abhorr'd  
Of them that sell their captives over sea.  
And Helen sighed, and bless'd her for that word  
'Yet will he ne'er be merciful to me.'

The critics complained that Lang had chosen a non-Homeric version of the legend. He had made Helen an innocent figure who acted solely as the instrument of Aphrodite, and added a prose appendix on the fortunes of Helen's reputation from Greek times to the nineteenth century. In this controversy on his treatment of the theme the warm, vigorous qualities of Lang's narrative seem to have been ignored.

The unfavourable reception of *Helen* was crucial: he relaxed his promising approaches towards ambitious work; poetry became an incidental activity, the instrument frequently of light and occasional verse. Much that is best in the later collections, has however, more than lightness: Mrs. Lang quotes Andrew Lang as saying, 'My mind is gay but my soul

is melancholy,' and she adds, 'it was the union—or the clashing—of the gaiety and melancholy that gave him his personality.' These elements unite to give some of his light fanciful verse a quality more purely imaginative. So in *The Fairy Minister* the poem opens whimsically with the adventures of the Rev. Mr. Kirk of Aberfoyle, who was carried away by the Fairies, but some more witching quality has entered into the closing lines,

And half I envy him who now,  
Clothed in her court's enchanted green,  
By moonlit loch or mountain's brow  
Is chaplain to the Fairy Queen.

For much of this later work no great claim must be made; the rhymes on golf, cricket, and railway novels, are verses decked to give ephemeral pleasure. Yet in each of the later volumes he appears at times as the lost romantic attempting to discover

Of Fairyland, the lost perfume,  
The sweet low light, the magic air.<sup>11</sup>

It can be seen in *Almae Matres*, in which he commemorates his affection for St. Andrews and Oxford, and it reappears in *Romance*:

And through the silver northern night  
The sunset slowly died away,  
And herds of strange deer, lily-white,  
Stole forth among the branches gray;  
About the coming of the light,  
They fled like ghosts before the day!

Lang's place among the minor poets of the period is larger than is sometimes allowed. His versatility has been punished too severely. Engaged in incessant prose work, he had not the disciplined leisure which sustained poetic composition demands. Nor in his life of preoccupied diurnality would those moments of quickened sensation come so easily. He caught poetic images sometimes from his sober prose tasks; two of his most memorable sonnets are on Homer, *In Ithaca* and *The Odyssey*, while one of his best lyrics is *Three Portraits of Prince Charles*. Much of his verse belongs to the trivial, but when the more worthy poems are collected their number is considerable, and

a few, such as the translation from Gérard de Nerval, already quoted, show that he had a kinship with the creations of pure imagination.

There exists in the later nineteenth century, along with lighter verse, a rich tradition of comic and nonsense verse, some of which has a distinguishing quality of vivacity and metrical ingenuity. This activity is summarized here through some of its main practitioners. No attempt is made to pursue it further, though the comic periodical verses, with their pen-and-ink illustrations, are a revealing feature in the fugitive literature of the Victorian age.

Edward Lear <sup>12</sup> (1812-1888) makes an original contribution to light verse by gaining a comic effect from sheer nonsense. Born in 1812 of Danish descent, he was one of a family of twenty-one children. He had early to earn his own living, and developing a talent for making coloured illustrations of birds and animals he obtained employment at the Zoological Gardens. In 1832 he published a volume of coloured ornithological drawings, *Family of the Psittacidae*. His work gained the notice of the Earl of Derby, and he was invited to draw the animals and birds at Knowsley; these were privately printed in 1856 as *The Knowsley Menagerie*. He was a favourite with the family, and particularly with the Earl's grandchildren, and it was for them that he published *A Book of Nonsense* in 1846. Much of his later life was spent wandering in Europe and the Far East, and he produced a number of volumes illustrated with landscape studies. The early nonsense volume was followed by *Nonsense Songs, Stories, Botany and Alphabets* (1871); *More Nonsense Songs, Pictures, etc.* (1872); *Laughable Lyrics* (1877). Lear's first volume was in the form of limericks, a form which owes its modern popularity largely to the wide diffusion of his verses. Historically the limerick may be described as a variation of Poulter's measure worked out in trisyllabic feet. The nature of the stanza is best seen if the limerick is written out not in three lines as is customary but as five short lines, rhyming, a a b b a. It can then be seen that one's natural intuition for rhyme demands that the rhyme of the first two lines shall be answered and the insertion of the third and fourth lines only stimulates this desire. Lear

seems to realize that as long as he completes the verse pattern he may say what he likes, and he makes full use of this licence. He chooses to make simple statements, coherent syntactically, but with a delightful detachment from all that is reasonable. So he begins *A Book of Nonsense* with a limerick, which once one has seen his illustration and his portrait can be described as autobiographical :

There was an Old Man with a beard, who said, ' It is just as I feared !—  
Two Owls and a Hen, four Larks and a Wren,  
Have all built their nests in my beard ! '

And so he continued. In the later volumes he used other, more elaborate, stanza forms, but the method by which the effect is gained is, however, consistently the same. Lear, like Shadwell, ' never deviates into sense ' ; he is beyond parody and burlesque in a world where things are not what they seem. He retains a well-defined verse pattern which gives to his statements a sense of the inevitable, and so without any grotesque phrasing or imagery he steps straight into another world :

The Owl and the Pussy-cat went to sea  
In a beautiful pea-green boat,  
They took some honey, and plenty of money,  
Wrapped up in a five-pound note.  
The Owl looked up to the stars above,  
And sang to a small guitar,  
' O lovely Pussy ! O Pussy, my love,  
What a beautiful Pussy you are,  
You are,  
You are !  
What a beautiful Pussy you are ! '

Charles Lutwidge Dodgson <sup>13</sup> (1832-1898), known better by his pseudonym, ' Lewis Carroll ', followed a brilliant career at Rugby and Oxford, with a mathematical lectureship at Christ Church (1855-1881). His career was punctuated with the publication of works on mathematical subjects, the most interesting of which is reported to be his defence of Euclidian geometry, *Euclid and his Modern Rivals* (1879). A shy personality, he seems to have found pleasure in the companionship of young children and in a world of comic fantasy which he and they could enjoy together. He was writing comic verses

as early as 1853, and some of them were published by Edmund Yates, who gave him his pseudonym of 'Lewis Carroll'. Among his child friends was Alice (Mrs. Reginald Hargreaves), the daughter of Dean Liddell, and for her he wrote the volume *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland* (1865 ; reissued 1866), which was followed by *Through the Looking-Glass and What Alice found there* (1871). These volumes were mainly in prose, with verses interspersed, and their popularity was so widespread that in Mr. E. V. Lucas's happy phrase, they constituted 'a new nursery mythology'. The next volume was entirely in verse, *The Hunting of the Snark* (1876), as was its successor, *Phantasmagoria* (1876) ; these were published together with additions as *Rhyme ? and Reason ?* (1883). After an interval came the stories *Sylvie and Bruno* (1889) and *Sylvie and Bruno Concluded* (1893).

Lewis Carroll was the most ingenious mind that occupied itself with comic and nonsense verse in this period. His pieces are not written as an adult's concession to the child mind. They are a new world created for children and seemingly natural to their values and interests. Further, his nonsense always appears to have some inner coherence, to be a secret world, mad from our standards, but yet intelligible enough if only one had the clue. His simplest work is in parody, a motive found in many of the 'Alice' verses and in *Phantasmagoria*. Southey, Swinburne, Tennyson, and Longfellow all have comic motives imposed upon their staid stanzas. Dr. Watts was perhaps the main sufferer when out of his lines, 'How doth the little busy bee,' Carroll extracted :

How doth the little crocodile  
Improve his shining tail,  
And pour the waters of the Nile  
On every golden scale !

Beyond the parody of individual writers lay the parody of the ballad form which produced Carroll's best phantastic verses, *Jabberwocky* and *The Hunting of the Snark*. *Jabberwocky*,

'Twas brillig and the slithy toves

appears a mere mad carnival of words ; yet Carroll showed



that some of them had meaning, and even gave instructions on their pronunciation. In *The Hunting of the Snark* he reached his most imaginative work. Let it be conceded that the poem is nonsense, a very pleasing mania perhaps, but still not a property of our sensible world. This is no disqualification, for cold common sense might say the same of *The Ancient Mariner*. Nor can one escape the suggestion that this nonsense is not just nonsense. The rhythm, the movement of the story, is in parody of the ballad form, and the theme frequently has a vague and wistful symbolical suggestion. Bishop Blougram once compared life to a ship's cabin, and Carroll's voyage in *The Hunting* is not far from a similar satire on the incongruity of life and of what we pursue in life. It is Swift's satire on the muddled inadequacy of the human mind carried out with a gentle, comic grace which Swift might not have understood :

The Bellman himself they all praised to the skies—  
Such a carriage, such ease, and such grace!  
Such solemnity, too! One could see he was wise,  
The moment one looked in his face!

He had bought a large map representing the sea,  
Without the least vestige of land:  
And the crew were much pleased when they found it to be  
A map they could all understand.

It is neither in parody nor satire that the final quality of the poem lies, but in the ingenuity of its world, where pathos and fun mingle in frolicsome unity. He seemed to have lived in two separate personalities, the one which came to a shy, donnish compromise with the rational world and employed itself successfully in mathematical studies; the other that escaped into a child world consistent with itself, but free from the cramping restrictions of the world in which adult humanity has its being.

Sir William Schwenck Gilbert <sup>14</sup> (1836-1911), son of William Gilbert (1804-1890), the novelist, followed an irregular education at Boulogne and London with a commission in the militia and a government clerkship. He has himself told <sup>15</sup> how a minute legacy led him to throw up the restraints of regular employment; he began to read for the Bar, and at the same

time found his real profession in literature. Gilbert's work as a writer divides itself into three groups: his comic verse, contributed mainly to *Fun*, and published as *The Bab Ballads* (1869) and *More Bab Ballads* (1874); his dramas and burlesques, beginning with *Dulcamara* (1866) and including the blank verse fantasy, *The Palace of Truth* (1870), based on Madame de Genlis's story *Le Palais de la Vérité*; finally, with Sir Arthur Seymour Sullivan (1842-1900) as composer he was librettist for a series of comic operas, beginning with *Thespis* (1871) and continuing with a series, produced under the management of Richard D'Oyly Carte: *Trial by Jury* (1875); *The Sorcerer* (1877); *H.M.S. Pinafore* (1878); *The Pirates of Penzance* (1879); *Patience* (1881); *Iolanthe* (1882); *Princess Ida* (1884); *The Mikado* (1885); *Ruddigore* (1887); *The Yeomen of the Guard* (1888); *The Gondoliers* (1889); *Utopia Limited* (1893); *The Grand Duke* (1896).

Gilbert's most important work is in comic opera: he was able to rescue a dull stage from farce and burlesque. With Sullivan's aid he supplied a light humorous satire, nimble in wit and verse, and if too superficial to possess any Aristophanic quality, yet sufficiently barbed to make itself felt amid the foibles of the day. So *Patience*, which attacked the 'vapours' of aestheticism, was mortally effective as satire, despite its accompanying ripple of laughter. The importance of Gilbert on the history of the stage in the nineteenth century lies outside this study. It can be easily under-estimated: he helped to rid the theatre of dullness; through *The Palace of Truth*, and later through the operas, he helped to construct G. B. Shaw's conception of dramatic character, and if the theatre at the close of the century presents a criticism of life, Gilbert was one of the first to show how that could be achieved.

Here he is studied only as a poet, and, strangely enough, most of his later work arose out of these early comic poems. *Trial by Jury* had appeared as a verse incident in *Fun* (April 1868), eight years before it was expanded into a 'comic cantata'. Many of the operas are derived from suggestions in *The Bab Ballads*; *H.M.S. Pinafore*, for instance, owes its origin to the situations already found in *Captain Reece*. His most obvious power lay in verbal and prosodic dexterity. Speed, stress, inversion, have all an additional value and

emphasis in comic verse. Gilbert had mastered the comic patterns, and with apparent inevitableness he sent the words gambolling through his stanzas. Further, he possessed, except in a few pieces, such as *Only a Dancing Girl*, the power, which Congreve had, of making his world all comic, without intrusion of moral sentiment. Alone he might have remained merely a writer of comic poems, dexterous and pleasantly satirical. With Sullivan he was able to bring wit and grace back into popular musical entertainment in England.

Charles Stuart Calverley <sup>16</sup> (1831-1884), born at Martley in Worcestershire, was a connexion of the Yorkshire family of Calverley. His parents were named Blayds, but later they took the name of Calverley. In the sixteenth century, his ancestor, Walter Calverley, had been associated with a grim tragedy which had passed into Elizabethan drama: now, by strange irony, three hundred years later, one who had adopted the name was to write verse that was a delicate filagree. He had a brilliant career at Harrow as a schoolboy; at Oxford his tutors thought that a sense of high-spirited fun affected his studies. He transferred himself to Cambridge, where he showed his quality by winning a bagful of distinctions, mainly for classical verse. He married a lady of the Calverley family and became squire of Oulton Hall, near Leeds. He followed no career, and ill-health and disability clouded much of his later life. He died in 1884. His verses are to be found in *Verses and Translations* (1862); *Translations into English and Latin* (1866); *Theocritus translated into English verse* (1869); *Fly Leaves* (1872). He worked in two distinct genres. First, he wrote Latin poems and translated English poems into Latin and Latin into English; secondly, he produced light humorous verse and parody, best represented by *Fly Leaves* (1872). The parodist and the translator have common purpose in their desire to appreciate form, and ultimately it is the same technical skill that allows Calverley to make his comic parody of Browning and his translations of religious poems from the Paris Breviary. He spoke himself of 'form-translation' as an ideal, and by this he would imply not only adherence to the original pattern but a capturing of the tempo and the quality of mood. His prose papers on translation <sup>17</sup> demonstrate how keenly he

had considered the problems and ethics of translation, and his own versions show how he brought his metrical grace to master the difficulties of the art.

In original verse he shared with Gilbert the skill of playing with words in a gentle, delicate way. It can be seen in such poems as his A B C :

A is an Angel of blushing eighteen :  
B is the Ball where the Angel was seen.

His last translation was also an A B C poem, but of a very different kind, a rendering of an 'alphabetical hymn by Thomasius,' published in Archbishop Trench's *Sacred Latin Poetry* :

As a thief, who falls at midnight on his unsuspecting prey,  
When we think not shall o'ertake us the Almighty's Judgment Day.  
Brief shall seem to men the pleasures that they prized in times of yore,  
When they know that as a moment Time hath past, and is no more.

These two poems serve to illustrate the variety of theme in Calverley and the technical dexterity which united them.

Many of his verses were parodies of his major contemporaries. Parodies cannot easily survive the originals from which they derive, and for this reason some of Calverley's pieces have lost their freshness. In *The Cock and Bull* story, he captured the restlessness of Browning's verse in *The Ring and the Book* :

You see this pebble-stone ? It's a thing I bought  
Of a bit of a chit of a boy i' the mid o' the day—  
I like to dock the smaller parts-o'-speech.  
As we curtail the already curtail'd cur.

Equally apt was his parody of the Pre-Raphaelite poets who wrote ballads with a refrain. Some of their critics had suggested that the refrain was meaningless, and Calverley emphasized this in his ballad of 'The auld wife sat at her ivied door', where the line 'Butter and eggs and a pound of cheese' is used with gay inanity. Sometimes he writes original light verse, as in the *Ode to Tobacco*, where a *rime couée* stanza is adapted to his comic purposes.

It is difficult not to remember that behind all Calverley's light-heartedness there lurks the tragedy of ill-health. Those who knew him as a young man believed that he might have achieved anything that he wished to do. Yet he accomplished nothing that serves as an adequate record of his great talents, but in light verse, as well as in verse translation, he has a distinctive place.

Calverley's talent is paralleled in that of the brilliant son of Sir James Fitzjames Stephen, James Kenneth Stephen (1859-1892), whose career at Eton and Cambridge came to an untimely end as the result of an accident. Stephen had followed his scholastic successes with preparation for a legal career, though much of his time was devoted to literature and to journalism. He produced, on somewhat unpractical lines, a weekly journal, *The Reflector*, which, despite its short life, contained much commendable work by Stephen himself, with contributions by Meredith and others, who delighted in Stephen's methods of editorial freedom. His verse is contained in two slim volumes, *Lapsus Calami* (1891) and *Quo Musa Tendis* (1891). His collected verses were issued with a memoir in 1896. If parody be the extraction of the virtue of one poem and its transference into another mood or environment where all its intention becomes comic, then Stephen is one of the masters of this light but subtle art. His successes have an easy and unexaggerated certainty of effect. Browning was of course at hand as one whose poetry cried out to be parodied, and Stephen has welcomed the opportunity in his dexterous verses, *The Last Ride Together* (*From Her point of view*). Byron, Gray and the ballade-writers are gently mocked. He captures the prosody, syntax, and vocabulary of the writers whom he parodies, and combines this with an ingenious inversion of their sentiment. It is the completeness of his effects, combined with their adroitness, that give his work its main charm. This skill can be seen most obviously in his poem to R. K., where he seizes upon Kipling's more rhetorical style :

When mankind shall be delivered  
From the clash of magazines,  
And the inkstand shall be shivered  
Into countless smithereens :

When there stands a muzzled stripling,  
 Mute, beside a muzzled bore :  
 When the Rudyards cease from kipling  
 And the Haggards Ride no more.

When he abandons parody, his verses still show the same features, a light theme, or a seemingly serious theme turned into lightness by prosodic neatness and a finish in phrasing. None of his original verse possesses the final excellence of his parodies, for Stephen is at his best as the disguised and jesting burlesquer.

1. *Miscellanies* (London, 1796); see also, Andrew Lang, *Letters on Literature* (1889).

2. For a further account of the use of these French forms in English, see *The Ballade*, H. L. Cohen (New York, 1915), and *Lyric Forms from France*, H. L. Cohen (New York, 1922); also *Ballads and Rondeaux*, etc., ed. Gleeson White (1887).

3. *Latter-Day Lyrics*, W. D. Adams (1878).

4. *Austin Dobson*, Alban Dobson (1928); *Austin Dobson, An Anthology*, Alban Dobson (1924).

5. *A Bibliography of Austin Dobson*, Alban Dobson (First Edition Club), (1925).

6. See Stephen Gwynn in *The Dictionary of National Biography*.

7. *Sir Edmund Gosse*, Hon. Evan Charteris, 2 vols. (1931).

8. Loc. cit. in 7.

9. It was Andrew Lang's desire that no official biography should be issued, but there is an excellent notice in *The Dictionary of National Biography* by G. S. Gordon, and this can be supplemented by the same author's *Andrew Lang Lecture* (1927); see also the critical symposium on Lang's work in *The Quarterly Review*, April 1913, and the article in the same review by George Saintsbury, October 1923.

10. Mrs. Andrew Lang has some comments in her introduction on the ethics of preserving fugitive verse. But who is to decide what is fugitive verse?

11. In *Ercildoune in Ban and Arrière Ban* (1894).

12. For biography see *Letters of Edward Lear to Chichester Fortescue* (London, 1907), and *Later Letters* (London, 1911).

13. With E. V. Lucas's account in *The Dictionary of National Biography* see *The Life and Letters of Lewis Carroll*, Stuart Dodgson Collingwood (London, 1898); *The Collected Verse of Lewis Carroll*, etc., with an introd. by J. F. McDermot (New York, 1924); L. Reed (1932); there are also studies by I. Bowman (1899), Belle Moses (1910); and *A Handbook of the Writings of Rev. C. L. Dodgson*, S. H. Williams and F. Madan (1931); for a list of the works see *A Bibliography of the Writings of Lewis Carroll* (C. L. Dodgson, M.A.), S. H. Williams (1924).

14. *Sir W. S. Gilbert*, Isaac Goldberg (Boston, 1913), and a biography by Sidney Dark and Rowland Grey (1923). There are a number of other studies, dealing mainly with the operas ; see also *Sir William Schwenck Gilbert, A Bibliography*, Townley Searle (1931).

15. *Cornhill*, Dec. 1863.

16. *The Literary Remains of C. S. Calverley*, W. J. Sendall (London, 1885) ; *Calverley and some Cambridge Wits*, R. B. Ince (1929).

17. See Calverley's prose papers on translations in loc. cit. in 16.

## CHAPTER XII

### WILLIAM ERNEST HENLEY AND ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

WILLIAM ERNEST HENLEY (1849-1903). Henley's biography has yet to be written,<sup>1</sup> but his 'boisterous and piratical' personality stands out clearly in the impressions of his contemporaries.<sup>2</sup> He was educated at the Crypt School, in Gloucester, where T. E. Brown, the poet, was a master. Tubercular disease affected him in childhood, and he had to suffer the amputation of a foot. Later at Edinburgh Infirmary, under Lord Lister, he effected a painful recovery. Ill-health returned periodically, but he was able to devote himself strenuously to literary work. As editor of *The Scots Observer* and *The National Observer* he contrived to gather around him the most brilliant talent of his day; unfortunately he was less successful in making these journals financially prosperous. His own literary work included a series of dramas which he wrote with R. L. Stevenson, essays and criticism, the supervision of the *Tudor Translations*, and the preparation of numerous anthologies of which the *Lyra Heroica* (1891) was the most popular. His whole life was devoted to literature, but little of it to poetry. His first volume, produced after much periodical publication, was *A Book of Verses* (1888); it was followed in 1892 by *The Song of the Sword*, which included *London Voluntaries*, and both volumes were united in *Poems* (1898). *Hawthorn and Lavender* followed in 1899, and *For England's Sake* in 1900, *The Passing of Victoria* (1901), *A Song of Speed* in 1903. *A Collected Edition* of prose and poetry was issued in 1908.

Henley's most interesting work occurs in his first volume, *Verses* (1888). Its contents are divided into three distinct groups: rhymeless pieces, which, with some poems in conventional form, make a series entitled *In Hospital*; lyrics, in simple stanzas, including the popular *Out of the night that covers me*, and *Or ever the knightly years were gone*; finally, a gathering of ballades, rondels, sonnets, quatorzains, and rondeaus, in which he had adapted himself to the Gosse and Dobson bypath of Victorian romanticism without adding much



that is his own. His ballade *Of a Toyokuni Colour-Print* recalls that the cultivation of ballades synchronized with the interest in Japanese art, and suggests that possibly the two fashions had something in common. The irregular, rhymeless pieces of *In Hospital* are, in contrast, revolutionary and modern. In theme they are grim impressions, sparing in vocabulary and realistic. *Operation* is a typical example, though it has a greater regularity of form than some of the other pieces :

You are carried in a basket,  
     Like a carcase from the shambles,  
 To the theatre, a cockpit,  
 Where they stretch you on a table.

Then they bid you close your eyelids,  
     And they mask you with a napkin,  
     And the anaesthetic reaches  
     Hot and subtle through your being.

The origins of Henley's irregular verse are difficult to ascertain. He has no contact with the rhythmical prose of Walt Whitman ; even at its freest, Henley's verse is closer to a regular pattern. He had patterns for irregular verse in Matthew Arnold, in *The Strayed Reveller*, *Philomela*, and *Heine's Grave*. Arnold had found models for his licences in the Greek odes and tragic choruses, in Goethe's reflective and elegiac pieces, and in the borderland of these two influences which arises from Goethe's own imitations of the antique. It is difficult to prove that Henley made direct use of these models, though he parallels their movement in such poems as *Clinical*, where all stanza pattern seems to be abandoned :

Hist ? . . .  
 Through the corridor's echoes  
 Louder and nearer  
 Comes a great shuffling of feet.

A number of Henley's verses retain a regular stanza pattern, without rhyme, as in *Casualty* :

As with varnish red and glistening  
 Dripped his hair : his feet looked rigid ;  
 Raised, he settled stiffly sideways :  
 You could see his hurts were spinal.

This is the verse of the Spanish ballads and folk-songs, with the modification that they are governed by a liberal conception of assonance, in place of Henley's abandonment of rhyme. Heine had imitated the Spanish form in *Romancero*, and Henley, who shows other derivations from Heine, may have adapted it from that source. Heine would thus give a model for a form which would have the appearance of freedom without necessitating a complete break with tradition. Henley adds the novelty of brutal, unlovely themes, which seem to fit with the bare rhymeless verses. Henley's variety can be seen by the appearance in this same volume of dexterously contrived ballades. While he pirouettes here in accordance with contemporary fashion, he introduces themes of pathos and of the endurance of fate, which are marked with his own personality. As in the hospital poems he has an alert faculty for brief revealing epithets; so in *Ballade of Dead Actors* he holds a complete post-mortem on stage life :

The curtain falls, the play is played ;  
The Beggar packs beside the Beau ;  
The Monarch troops, and troops the Maid ;  
The Thunder huddles with the Snow.  
Where are the revellers high and low ?  
The clashing swords ? The lover's call ?  
The dancers gleaming row on row ?  
Into the night go one and all.

Prince, in one common overthrow  
The Hero tumbles with the Thrall :  
As dust that drives, as straws that blow,  
Into the night go one and all.

In his irregular poems Henley appears to break away from the over-used forms of Victorian poetry. In content and method they traverse new ground and gain from their historical position an interest unwarranted by their intrinsic worth. Unfortunately Henley did not develop poetically, for his most effective work is in these early poems : the rhymelessness and irregularity of *In Hospital* have poetic method and purpose, but later these elements seem occasionally a poetic excuse for an easy rhetoric that cannot be troubled with rhyme. In *The Song of the Sword* he writes irregular verses which have the

effect of a diffused translation of Anglo-Saxon poetry. Licence and an absence of rhythmical control are still more apparent in *A Song of Speed*, where he attempts to adapt to poetry the modern theme of the automobile.

*London Voluntaries* are among the more successful of the later poems. They give large-flowing impressions of London by night and day, employing a combination of six- and ten-syllable lines, such as Spenser and Milton had used. Rhetorical as is the quality of the verse, it has scattered within it phrases of keen imaginative insight, and the theme has freshness and vigour. Henley is using a more deliberately poetic vocabulary to gain orchestrated effects and diversifying the rhetorical passages with keen, silhouetted pictures. The effect can be seen in the following passage from the second Voluntary :

And lo ! the Wizard Hour,  
His silent, shining sorcery winged with power !  
Still, still the streets, between their carcanets  
Of linking gold, are avenues of sleep.  
But see how gable ends and parapets  
In gradual beauty and significance  
Emerge ! And did you hear  
That little twitter—and—cheep,  
Breaking inordinately loud and clear  
On this still, spectral, exquisite atmosphere ?  
'Tis a first nest at matins ! And behold  
A rakehell cat—how furtive and acold !  
A spent witch homing from some infamous dance—  
Obscene, quick-trotting, see her tip and fade  
Through shadowy railings into a pit of shade !

Heine would appear again to have been the model, for Henley's verses in the *Voluntaries* are paralleled by the effects gained by Heine in the *Nord-See* poems in *Das Buch der Lieder*. In *For England's Sake* he rivalled Mr. Kipling in patriotic poetry. The vehemence of his nationalism does not frequently achieve poetic expression, but in one lyric, *Pro Rege Nostro* ('What have I done for you, England, my England ?'), he expresses a popular sentiment in strong, plangent language.

Henley's poetic output is small, but it is marked with strong originality. He could write good 'shouting' lyrics, embodying moods and themes that even the least sophisticated reader could understand. He had variety and could step from that

romantic Babylon to which Christian slaves had been imported, presumably from the seacoasts of Bohemia, to the stark, clean cruelty of a modern hospital. He had an important influence on the employment of freer verse forms, and showed the way in which later poetry was to develop. Heine, as it has been suggested, had influenced him in his experiments, and equally he can imitate Heine in lyric verse, with simple ballad structure, and a tempestuous enthusiasm in sentiment. This frequently results in a fresh and vigorous movement in his lyrical stanzas :

My songs were once of the sunrise :  
They shouted it over the bar ;  
First-footing the dawns, they flourished,  
And flamed with the morning star.

While he was content at times to imitate the contemporary ' bric-à-brac ' of ballades and rondeaus he showed also that he could adapt these forms to the expression of more weighty themes. His knowledge and sympathy with French literature may be paralleled with that of Andrew Lang. It comes out most clearly in the astonishing boldness of his adaptation of Villon into modern slang :

Villon's Straight Tip to all Cross Coves,  
' *Tout aux tavernes et aux filles.*'

Suppose you screeve ? or go cheap-jack ?  
Or fake the broads ? or fig a nag ?  
Or thimble-rig ? or knap a yack ?  
Or pitch a snide ? or smash a rag ?

Yet on turning to his work one finds that the impression of his personality is based on very few poems ; Henley, in his preface to his *Poems* (1898) seems to have been surprised himself by the paucity of his production. He assigned his own departure from poetry to economic reasons : ' I found myself (about 1877) so utterly unmarketable that I had to addict myself to journalism for the next ten years.' <sup>3</sup> He is not the only writer of the period who is lured by the economic attractions of prose, though with Henley one wonders whether increased leisure would have proved him to be more than a poet in flashes, however brilliant those individual flashes might have been.

The life of Robert Louis Stevenson <sup>4</sup> (1850-1894) falls naturally into legend, and numerous writers have attended to his biography. Unfortunately an attempt was made to cast an atmosphere of false piety, and innocent chivalry, around him ; it occurs in Graham Balfour's *Life* (1901), and it has entered into Colvin's edition of the *Letters* (1911).<sup>5</sup> The truth is less innocent but more interesting : its record is due largely to the work of G. S. Hellman and J. A. Steuart. Nor can the biographical problem be ignored in estimating Stevenson's poetry ; the influences which helped to model the legend also helped to frustrate the artist. Apart from a few pamphlets : *Not I* (1881) ; *Moral Emblems* (1882) ; *Familiar Epistle in Verse and Prose* (1896), the poetry that Stevenson published in his lifetime is contained in a book of children's poems, *A Child's Garden of Verses* (1885), and in two other volumes, *Underwoods* (1887) and *Ballads* (1890). To these a posthumous volume was added, *Songs of Travel* (1896). Yet when the *Complete Poems* were published in America in 1923 <sup>5</sup> nearly half the volume was made up of previously unprinted work. One is familiar enough with the collected edition that has been swollen with fugitive pieces, but here the new work is as different from the old as the man himself from the legendary Stevenson. The unpublished work modifies previous conceptions and certainly falsifies Mrs. Stevenson's dictum, that the writing of poetry was for him merely a matter of entertainment.

He was born in Edinburgh (1850), an only child, proud and fragile, with pious parents and a sternly religious nurse. His schooldays were spent irregularly, hindered by ill-health and indifference, though he was already reading the books that pleased him. His father, a distinguished engineer, hoped that he would follow in the family profession, and entered him as a student at Edinburgh University. He showed ability in his studies, but such distaste for the subject that his family allowed him to abandon engineering and to read for the Bar. He prepared himself fitfully and was finally called in 1875. Yet these Edinburgh years (1867-1875) were the most formative in his life. He came into open conflict with his parents on moral and religious issues ; he entered the Bohemian circles of Edinburgh, and formed more than one deep attachment. In 1875 he met Henley and Leslie Stephen, and from that year he

realized that literature would be his profession. Between 1875 and 1878 he worked feverishly, publishing comparatively little, but testing his capacities in verse and prose. Ill-health was still pestering him, but he was restlessly active, moving from Edinburgh to London and from there to Fontainebleau. In 1878 *An Inland Voyage* was published, and his career as a prose writer began in earnest. In the years of prose writing that follow he published little verse, but he often expressed himself intimately in unpublished poems. In 1879 he met at Fontainebleau a Mrs. Osbourne, an American lady of Swedish-Dutch extraction, and they became deeply attached. They were married in 1880. Mrs. Stevenson's devotion helped Stevenson to survive the many crises that his health was to endure. She became, however, the 'censor' of his personality, and aided by her influence the 'official' legend of chivalric piety was constructed; some of his creative impulses were frustrated and many of his poems left unpublished. From 1880 to 1887 he was establishing his reputation as a prose-writer. *Treasure Island*, which was elevated from serial publication in *Young Folks* in 1881 to volume form in 1883, was followed later by *The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde* (1886) and *Kidnapped* (1886). Two volumes of verse appear within this period, *A Child's Garden of Verses* (1885), and *Underwoods* (1887). This literary activity was maintained despite severe ill-health, which drove him to Davos and Hyères in a fruitless quest for strength.

In 1887, after his father's death, he left, with his family, for America, and after a period in the United States and some voyaging in Pacific waters, he found a home at Vailima, in Samoa (1891). Here he spent the remaining years, industrious as ever, a genial and willing correspondent of men of letters in England, and on the island a definite personage, with an interest in the welfare of the people. The last volume of verse published in his lifetime was *Ballads* (1890). In the following study Stevenson's published poetry has been considered first, and then the verse issued in 1916 and 1921 from the Stevenson manuscripts.

*A Child's Garden of Verses* (1885), Stevenson's most popular volume, belongs to that child poetry which follows the developing popularity of Blake in the later nineteenth century.

Stevenson has nothing of Blake's mysticism, yet, on the other hand, he avoids the mere nursery rhyme quality which affects so many of the poems in Christina Rossetti's *Sing-Song*. He has closer contacts with that apt practitioner of child verses, W. Brighty Rands, whose *Lilliput Revels* had appeared in 1870-1872. The adult portraying in simple lyrics the content of the child mind is ever in danger of banality and false sentiment; this Stevenson escapes, though his children have a pre-Freudian innocence and gentleness. His skill lies in the imaginative phrasing with which he decorates these pieces:

I should like to rise and go  
Where the golden apples grow;—  
Where below another sky  
Parrot islands anchored lie,  
And, watched by cockatoos and goats,  
Lonely Crusoes building boats.

It is an easy genre, but more has been inserted than the genre itself demanded. The poems are not without a biographical interest, if the love of adventure is in them ('My bed is like a little boat'), so too is the necessity for prayer; one wonders what strange combination of irony, pathos, and humour led him to write *System*:

Every night my prayers I say,  
And get my dinner every day;  
And every day that I've been good,  
I get an orange after food.

The child that is not clean and neat,  
With lots of toys and things to eat,  
He is a naughty child, I'm sure—  
Or else his dear papa is poor.

The volume gained a wide popularity, but Stevenson did not attempt to exploit his success. Two years later (1887) he published *Underwoods*. The memory of Ben Jonson and his school extends beyond the title, for many of the lyrics have Herrick's quality of sentiment and a few have Jonson's epigrammatic brevity. The volume contains both English and Scots poetry. The latter has more variety: social and religious themes are conducted with a pawkiness of humour,

in stanzas reminiscent of Burns. Stevenson is more outspoken here than in the English poems ; it is as if the satiric tradition of Scottish poetry allowed him to speak his mind :

While thus the lave o' mankind's lost,  
O' Scotland still God maks His boast—  
Puir Scotland, on whase barren coast  
A score or twa  
Auld wives wi' mutches an' a hoast  
Still keep His law.

Among the English poems, *Requiem* (' Under the wide and starry sky ') is the best remembered. Many of the other poems arise from the same mood : pictures of voyagings, as in *The Canoe Speaks* :

But I, the egg-shell pinnace, sleep  
On crystal waters ankle-deep,

and poems of journeyings, such as *A Song of the Road*. Simple themes and stanzas dominate, with a number of octosyllabics where over-facility intrudes. In sentiment there is a suggestion of fixation, as if the writer were playing up to his part of romantic vagrant.

In *Ballads* (1890), Stevenson attempts story-telling in verse. Of the three main pieces, the earliest, *Ticonderoga*, a re-rendering of a Highland theme, has grown diffuse through Stevenson's method of employing the ballad form. The verse has a pleasant lilt, but the central theme, the fatal mystery of the name Ticonderoga, fails to develop effectively. The other two poems are Tahitian stories, told in a manner reminiscent of William Morris. *The Feast of Famine* is a love theme of Stevenson's own invention : a poem where the narrative is choked by local colour that is far too local. *The Song of Rahéro* Stevenson based on an old Tahitian tradition, and the poem grows in strength as it proceeds. It opens with a simple, revenge motive but develops to a climax when Rahéro, whose whole tribe has been destroyed, escapes with a woman and sets out with her to found a new race. The poem concludes as Rahéro addresses her :

' Before your mother was born, the die of to-day was thrown  
And you selected :—your husband, vainly striving, to fall  
Broken between these hands :—yourself to be severed from all,



The places, the people, you love—home, kindred, and clan—  
And to dwell in a desert and bear the babes of a kinless man.'

*Songs of Travel* (1896), the posthumous volume, is in quality and theme a continuation of *Underwoods*. The same gesture of chivalric vagabondage is maintained. It occurs in the opening and best-known poem in the volume :

Give to me the life I love,  
Let the lave go by me,  
Give the jolly heaven above  
And the byway nigh me.

The same mood is found in the love poems, genial, romantic, and a little too facile, which form one of the major themes in this volume, and so it continues to the closing poem :

Sing me a song of a lad that is gone,  
Say, could that lad be I ?  
Merry of soul he sailed on a day  
Over the sea to Skye.

This atmosphere of God is in his heaven and all is right on the open road appears as an official optimism. Stevenson seems to have despaired of singing truthfully ' of a lad that is gone ', and to have presented instead an unrevealing picture of a perpetually interested and jolly lad that liked the open spaces. Such sentiments had their influence in the development of English poetry. They combined with Henley's thunderings to form a contrast to the pessimism that underlay much later Victorian work, and they influenced younger poets at the beginning of the twentieth century who were reacting against the nineties. Stevenson found a model for some aspects of his open-air romanticism in Heine, and equally for his exaggerated gestures in sentiment, and the contrasting excess of buoyancy. Occasionally, as in the following poem, he parallels closely some of the moods of Heine's lyrics :

The infinite shining heavens  
Rose and I saw in the night  
Uncountable angel stars  
Showering sorrow and light.

I saw them distant as heaven,  
Dumb and shining and dead,  
And the idle stars of the night,  
Were dearer to me than bread.

Night after night in my sorrow  
The stars stood over the sea,  
Till lo ! I looked in the dusk  
And a star had come down to me.

Among the poems in *Songs of Travel* is the following brief lyric :

I have trod the upward and the downward slope ;  
I have endured and done in days before ;  
I have longed for all, and bid farewell to hope ;  
And I have lived and loved, and closed the door.

The reader of Stevenson's poetry before 1916 could not have guessed how much had been closed out of view. It cannot be claimed that the poems issued in 1916 and 1921 by George S. Hellman convert Stevenson into a great poet, but they show that he attempted to express many phases of his experience. An important group of poems dates from his Edinburgh days, particularly from 1871 to 1875 ; many moods arise, and in keen self-revelatory poems he explores them. Love is a dominant motive, but imaged with greater fervency than in the *Songs of Travel*. *After Reading 'Antony and Cleopatra'* illustrates the mood of many of these poems :

As when the hunt by holt and field  
Drives on with horn and strife,  
Hunger of hopeless things pursues  
Our spirits throughout life.

The sea's roar fills us aching full  
Of objectless desire—  
The sea's roar, and the white moon-shine,  
And the reddening of the fire.

Who talks to me of reason now ?  
It would be more delight  
To have died in Cleopatra's arms  
Than be alive to-night.

The approach to sentiment in some of the love poems in this

new work varies ; there are a few poems of banter and humour ; some that retain the geniality of the published pieces, but more often the emphasis lies with passion, and its distress. So in *Love, What is Love?* he uses the epigrammatic form found frequently in the published poems, though here the mood is more grim :

Love—what is love ? A great and aching heart ;  
 Wrung hands ; and silence ; and a long despair.  
 Life—what is life ? Upon a moorland bare  
 To see love coming and see love depart.

Among the love poems is a memorable piece of uncertain date on an unborn child, *God gave to me a child in part*. Stevenson probably remembered Burns's approach to the same theme. His own treatment is quiet but poignant ; he explores the sentiment safely, revealing the lyrical potentialities which it possessed :

My voice may reach you, O my dear—  
 A father's voice perhaps the child may hear ;  
 And pitying, you may turn your view  
 On that poor father whom you never knew.

Alas ! alone he sits, who then,  
 Immortal among mortal men,  
 Sat hand in hand with love, and all day through  
 With your dear mother, wondered over you.

Apart from the love poems, many other moods occur. An early sonnet sequence, written possibly under Wordsworthian influence, shows how he experimented in a form which he used seldom in his later work. Further, he left a group of translations from Martial which he had hoped to expand into a complete volume. The series is incomplete, but it has a few renderings which have ease and mastery of form, though Stevenson usually avoids with whispered periphrases the smack and salacity of Martial's vocabulary. These renderings show how the study of Martial served to discipline Stevenson's quest of the epigram in his own poems.

The unpublished work reveals, then, a poet who treated poetry much more seriously than the published work would suggest. Only a limited number of these pieces exceed in

technical accomplishment the 'official' pieces ; many of them fall below. Stevenson had to pay the price of every busy prose-writer who puts poetry on 'half-pay'. But the image of Stevenson as a poet demands that these pieces should be considered. We need not doubt that the optimistic, open road mood was one which he sincerely felt, but it is elevated in the official poetry into a dominant, almost an all-prevailing, mood. Distress, self-reproach, poignancy, such are the themes which intrude from the unpublished work, and present us with a fuller and more human Stevenson. It has been pointed out that Stevenson in *A Child's Garden* has the couplet :

The world is so full of a number of things  
I'm sure we should all be as happy as kings,

but that his original manuscript version was :

The world is so great and I am so small  
I do not like it, at all, at all.

The unpublished work has kinship with that manuscript version. In privacy he records the sentiment that underlies the gesture of optimism with which he faced the world :

I have left all upon the shameful field,  
Honour and Hope, my God, and all but life ;  
Spurless, with sword reversed and dinted shield,  
Degraded and disgraced, I leave the strife.

That is not the only mood : valour is there too, irony and humour. The image of Stevenson the poet grows to completion ; it is of one who could write of his errings, his sorrows, as well as of his happiness. The poetry may not be technically better, but the themes are more varied and he has succeeded far more closely in disclosing himself in his verse.

1. The notice in *The Dictionary of National Biography* contains such facts as are available and the life, *W. E. Henley*, Kennedy Williamson (1930), adds little to this.

2. Stevenson's portrait of 'Burly' in *Talks and Talkers*.

3. *Poems* (1898) *Advertisement*.

4. A large literature has grown around Stevenson and his 'legend'.

The official biography is *The Life of Robert Louis Stevenson* (2 vols.). Sir Graham Balfour (1901, etc.) and to supplement its information and approach, *The True Stevenson*, G. S. Hellman (1925), *Robert Louis Stevenson*, J. A. Steuart (1924), are necessary documents. There are numerous other biographies, including A. H. Japp (1905), Arthur Johnstone (1905); *On the Trail of Stevenson*, Hamilton Clayton (1916); Rosaline O. Masson (1923); *An Intimate Portrait*, Lloyd Osbourne (1924). Of numerous critical studies the more interesting are those by L. C. Cornford (1899), G. K. Chesterton (1902), J. A. Hammerton (1907); H. H. Harper (1920), R. L. S., *His Work and Personality*; see also *Essays* ed. by A. St. J. Adcock (1924), and *R. L. Stevenson*, F. Swinnerton (revised edition, 1924); *La Vie de R. L. Stevenson*, J. M. Carré (Paris, 1929); see also *A Bibliography of the Works of R. L. Stevenson*, W. F. Prideaux (1917); and *The Letters of R. L. Stevenson* (4 vols.), ed. Sidney Colvin (1911).

5. This edition gives no source for the new poems; the sources of the new poems, and the poems themselves, were edited for *The Bibliophile Society* (Boston) by George S. Hellman (1916 and 1921). A reprint from this collection was issued in England as *New Poems* (1918).

## CHAPTER XIII

### JOHN DAVIDSON

JOHN DAVIDSON (1857-1909) wrote in his will that no biography of him should be published, no unpublished work should be issued, and that no work except of his own writing should appear in any of his books. His wishes have been regarded. All that is known of him is the obvious record of dates, occupations, and movements, and nothing emerges that can explain the fiery, troubled movement of his work. Davidson, while he disapproved of biography, conceded in his preface to Shakespeare's Sonnets (1908) that all the creative work is to some extent autobiographical, and it is from Davidson's work that we must alone hope to discover him.<sup>1</sup> He was born in 1857, in Renfrewshire. His education was irregular ; at thirteen he left school and went into a chemical laboratory ; at fifteen he was at school again as a pupil-teacher, and four years later he spent a session at Edinburgh University which completed his formal education. From 1878 to 1889 he was a teacher, a profession which he so detested that for one year (1884-1885) he tried clerking instead. In the middle of this period as a teacher he married. He was already writing, and his reading must have been varied, for he shows an acquaintance with Elizabethan and ballad literature, and, later, he knows Nietzsche, Ibsen, and the modern philosophical writers. In 1889 he came to London to seek a livelihood in the world of literature. He had previously written a number of poetical plays : one of them, *Bruce*, had been published in Glasgow in 1886. Little is known of the years that followed, except that he published continuously plays, novels, prose sketches, and poems. His main occupation was journalism, and if his poetry is a record of fact, he was as ill-at-ease amid the journalists as he had been amid the schoolmasters. Certainly it was a troubled period ; recognition he received, but he was often ill and more often poor. In 1906 he was awarded a Civil List pension of £100. His most revealing autobiographical statement on these last years occurs in the preface to *Fleet Street* (1909) : ' The time has come to make an end. I find my

pension is not enough ; I have therefore still to turn aside and attempt things for which people will pay. My health counts too. Asthma and other annoyances I have tolerated for years ; but I cannot put up with cancer.' In 1908 he left London for Penzance. In March 1909 he was missing from his house. Six months later a fisherman found his body washed up by the sea.

Davidson's first poetic period belongs to his pre-London days ; its content is in complete contrast to the work usually associated with his name. For here he is untouched by his own time, and produces a series of plays, based upon suggestions from Shakespearian drama. *Bruce* (1886), the earliest published work, reads like a Shakespearian chronicle piece ; he has caught the idiom and the method. The play deals with the struggle of Edward I against Bruce, and though the sympathy is with the Scots, there lurks a greater sense of national unity conveyed in a magnificent speech by Wallace in Act III :

We are your equals, not to be enslaved ;  
We are your kin, your brothers, to be loved.

In 1889 Davidson published at Greenock a volume of *Plays*. Two of these antedate *Bruce* : *An Unhistorical Pastoral* (Glasgow, 1877) ; *A Romantic Farce* (Edinburgh, 1878) ; one is of later date, the brilliant fantasy, partly in prose, *Scaramouch in Naxos* (Crieff, 1888). *An Unhistorical Pastoral* bears the same relation to Shakespearian comedy as *Bruce* does to the chronicle play. All the trappings are here : the king of Belmarie, who is thought to be dead, but comes back to his kingdom ; Rupert his son, who loves a maid of lowly birth, whose real parentage is discovered not to be lowly at all ; and a fine assortment of clowns and rustics, and even Oberon and Puck. The competent study piece of a young apprentice, it demonstrates that Davidson's early work began in a world of romantic kindness. Experience taught him savagely to deny these dream contours. *A Romantic Farce* is of the same texture : a romance of long-separated lovers, and long-lost children, played with a light-hearted conviction that the end will be happiness. *Scaramouch in Naxos*, a witty, original comedy, with glimpses of darker satire, is of much more mature conception, and despite Davidson's later attempts in drama, it remains probably

his most adequate play. Scaramouch, a showman in England, seeking a new attraction, attempts to hire old wine-sodden Silenus to impersonate Bacchus in his entertainment. A number of classical figures are introduced, all living in a modern world, and insisting on their pedigree in Lemprière as if it were Debrett's Peerage. The play closes with the appearance of the real Bacchus, a god of power, who frustrates the sordid designs of Scaramouch and Silenus. The verse has a strength that derives from Elizabethan originals, but it possesses a fragrant beauty of its own. Such is Silenus's speech, which opens :

I saw Endymion long ago  
Before the stars were tarnished : with his crook  
Sloped in his hand he wandered down a hill ;  
The night shone round him.

In this play, for the first time, Davidson opens that attack on his time which was to frustrate the romantic elements in his poetry ; the modern world reveals itself as a shallow vulgar affair, whose God is Silenus of the wineskin, not the young Bacchus. Davidson called the piece a pantomime, but he wrote a prose prologue, the most brilliant of all his prose passages, in which he confesses that the play is too complicated for pantomimic values. *Smith* (1888), a tragedy, was the last play of the Scottish period, and here for the first time Davidson portrays contemporary life. Whenever he enters that world in his poetry his mood is tragic. Out of the past only can he bring not only tragedy but gentleness and the gay colours of romance. Frequently in his poetic career he attempted to use old forms for modern circumstance, and here he uses blank verse for modern characters. Throughout, the effect is a combination of power with incongruity, of poetry with flat, hackneyed lines. The theme has the suggestion of an Ibsen play. *Smith*, with his friend Hallowes, a 'defrocked' clerk and teacher, leaves London for Garth, where they wander on to the estate of a Mr. Graham, and Hallowes, despairing of poetic success, kills himself. *Smith* is in love with a lady named Magdalen, and sooner than give her to her official lover he throws himself over a cliff and bears Magdalen with him. Here for the first time there appears in Davidson's work the



solution of suicide for those who find the world inadequate to their desires. It is a difficult theme to convey poetically, nor does Davidson succeed ; yet in isolated passages images of a mellow quality intrude, as in the opening lines :

Truth is an airy point between two cliffs  
Of adamant opinion.

Apart from its intrinsic value, the play shows Davidson's exploitation of his personal experience, and it contains some record of his developing thought. He expresses his distaste for teaching :

I, for food  
Have made myself a grindstone, edging souls  
Meant most for flying :

while his critical thought on literature and style is revealed in Smith's speech on language :

Our language is too worn, too much abused,  
Jaded and over-spurred, wind-broken, lame,—  
The hackneyed roadster every bagman mounts !

Throughout one finds developing a criticism of the modern world which can be seen at its clearest in a speech of Smith to Magdalen :

The hydra-headed creeds ; the sciences,  
That deem the thing is known when it is named ;  
And literature, thought's palace-prison fair ;  
Philosophy, the grand inquisitor,  
That racks ideas and is fooled with lies ;  
Society, the mud wherein we stand  
Up to the eyes, whence if I drag you forth,  
Saving your soul and mine, there shall ascend  
A poisonous blast that may o'ertake our lives.

In 1889 Davidson left Scotland for London, and with this change begins his second poetic period. He wrote much prose during the next decade, novels, and charming essays such as are found in *A Random Itinerary* (1894). His poetic production was unbroken ; in 1891 appeared *In a Music Hall*, and there followed, almost annually, little volumes, in glossy blue cloth, all but one of them decorated on the cover with a pleasingly elaborate device of gold : *Fleet Street Eclogues* (1893) ;

*Ballads and Songs* (1894); *A Second Series of Fleet Street Eclogues* (1896); *New Ballads* (1897); *The Last Ballad* (1899). *In a Music Hall* contains, first, six short dramatic monologues in which music-hall artists, refreshing themselves at the bar as they wait their turn, give pictures of themselves and of life. These are the children of Silenus, revealing their sordid, half-pathetic lives, in brisk, black-and-white sketches. The mood is staccato, and Davidson seems to have been influenced by Kipling's desire to see the thing as it is and to allow it to speak in its own vocabulary. The scene is nominally Glasgow, but one feels that spiritually Davidson came here into his closest contact with the London of the nineties. The rest of the volume is made up of a selection of miscellaneous poems of the period 1872-1889; short lyrics of pre-London days, historical pieces of the same period as *Bruce*, delicate nature studies, and lyrics of happy, gentle moods. He uses the French forms, popular in those decades, rondeau, roundel, and villanelle, but he uses them in a way fiercely different from that of Austin Dobson and Edmund Gosse. It is as if with deliberate irony he employed these decorative measures to reveal grim scenes such as the struggling artist whose wife and children have to suffer for lack of daily bread.

*Fleet Street Eclogues* was the first volume with which Davidson attracted marked critical attention. He uses the eclogue, the form of Theocritus and Spenser, for the discussions of Fleet Street journalists. The device has a freshness, but the effect is not without incongruity. Two qualities ever latent in Davidson's work emerge: a romanticism frequently suppressed, combines with an angry, unrestrained outcry against contemporary life. These two elements meet in his poetry in sudden conflict as if a sleeper had been awakened from the pleasant images of dream by a cry of anguished pain. So in the *Saint Swithin's Day* poem the close is a prayer, almost hysterical in its plea for protection from the modern world:

Help, ere it drive us mad, this devil's din!

But modernity has not yet worn Davidson down; his love of nature and of pleasing old-world fantasies still allows him to re-create a world of gentle devices and ballad theme. One of

the pleasantest recollections occurs in *Good Friday*, when he recounts how Adam and Eve went out of Eden :

Their haggard eyes in vain to God,  
To all the stars of heaven turned ;  
But when they saw where in the sod,  
The golden-hearted daisies burned,

Sweet thoughts that still within them dwelt  
Awoke, and tears embalmed their smart ;  
On Eden's daisies couched they felt  
They carried Eden in their heart.

In *Ballads and Songs* this same dual mood prevails, and yet the old-world romanticism again triumphs. The volume contains some of Davidson's best-known pieces, notably *A Ballad of a Nun*, where he re-tells the story usually known in medieval literature as ' the Nun who goes out to see the World ' . It is the beautiful fable of a nun who, deserting her convent, mingled in the world, and who, when she returned, wan with passion, found that the Virgin Mother had impersonated her in her absence. The story is famous in the medieval literature of Western Europe, but Davidson, who probably knew Adelaide Anne Procter's version in *A Legend of Provence*, narrates it afresh with economy and deeply conveyed feeling. Had he been satisfied with this medium he could have become the most successful modern exploiter of the ballad, but it was not in his nature to be satisfied, and there occurs already in this volume a strain of fretful, subjective poetry. It is to be found in *A Ballad in Blank Verse of the Making of a Poet*, which is as unlike a ballad as possible. All qualities of pleasant phrasing and melody have disappeared, and instead there emerges a mood of satire, and a wilful self-assertion which preludes the later *Testaments* :

Henceforth I shall be God ; for consciousness  
Is God : I suffer ; I am God : this Self,  
That all the universe combines to quell,  
Is greater than the universe ; and I  
Am that I am.

Closely allied to this is the *Ballad of Heaven*, a poem of personal

despair arising from poverty and lack of recognition, a theme already emphasized in his first volume of lyrics :

He wrought at one great work for years ;  
 The world passed by with lofty look :  
 Sometimes his eyes were dashed with tears ;  
 Sometimes his lips with laughter shook.

His wife and child went clothed in rags,  
 And in a windy garret starved :  
 He trod his measures on the flags,  
 And high on heaven his music carved.

The increased attachment to such moods can be seen in the volumes which follow. Into *A Second Series of Fleet Street Eclogues* the harsh enforced vocabulary intrudes and with it a bitter commentary on contemporary life ; as in *Lammas* :

The blare of personal and party aims  
 In parliaments and journals seems indeed  
 No substitute for Sinai ; but it serves :  
 And from the vehement logomachy  
 Of interest and cabal, something humane  
 At happy intervals proceeds.

An attempt is made to break away to early moods in the *May-Day* poem, but this lacks the spontaneity of some of his earlier pieces. *New Ballads* reiterates the now persistent theme of the struggling artist and his distressed family ; it comes through in *A Ballad of an Artist's Wife*, and in a different way in *A Woman and her Son*, which is a fiercer version of the theme found earlier in *A Ballad of the Making of a Poet*. Despite these preoccupations, this volume has some signal examples of Davidson's varied poetic power. In *Piper, Play!* he contrives to fashion a lyric, whose background is the life of the industrial worker :

Now the furnaces are out,  
 And the aching anvils sleep ;  
 Down the road the grimy rout  
 Tramples homeward twenty deep.  
 Piper, play ! Piper, play !  
 Though we be o'erlaboured men,  
 Ripe for rest, pipe your best !  
 Let us foot it once again !

In *A New Ballad of Tannhäuser* he uses again his skill in manipulating ballad form for a traditional theme; the poem seems to be an answer to Swinburne's *Laus Veneris*, for in Davidson the monk does not sicken of his love.

*The Last Ballad* was the volume with which Davidson brought this second period in his poetic work to a close. Early and late moods seem once again in conflict, and yet most of the poems are occupied with fables of romance. It is as if Davidson were lingering with medieval themes before bidding them a long farewell. In the title poem he isolates an incident in the lives of Lancelot and Galahad, and relates it with that mastery of the ballad medium which he now possessed. He accomplished here an important though neglected contribution to the treatment of Arthurian legend in the nineteenth century. With no moral and sophisticated purpose to fulfil, he recaptured the mood of the ballad without ransoming his modernity to any conscious archaism. *The Ordeal*, the other long poem in this volume, is a narrative poem with a medieval theme which in its insistence on stern and strenuous incident is reminiscent of Morris's *Sir Peter Harpdon's End*. With this volume Davidson completed a notable and individual contribution to the lyrical poetry of the period. He exploited romantic themes when it seemed that the century had exhausted all their possibilities, and then he wrote 'finis' to this type of work and resurrected himself anew as a poet in difficult, philosophical pieces which are powerful and ill-disciplined and through whose strength there lurks an isolation of spirit, not unakin at times to the fantasies of the insane.

Without biographical data one must form a subjective judgment on this change. Whatever may be the intrinsic value of the poetry that follows, one cannot detach from one's mind some image of heroism in relationship to Davidson's last endeavour. The century was in need of a new poetry, a poetry such as Meredith and Hardy had attempted, where poetic creation allied itself to the deep-rooted origins of the modern consciousness. His effort is not completely successful, but the image of endeavour remains, and as he himself wrote in *A Random Itinerary* after a poignant reference to Cowper's *Castaway*: 'I would sooner be a castaway than never sail at all.' Lyrical poetry ceased, only to be fitfully reawakened in

*Holiday* (1906), *Fleet Street and other Poems* (1909). The more strident elements, already latent in his lyrical work, possessed him. He conceived afresh his poetical function, and determined that it was within him to create a new poetry and from that poetry a new world. He seemed to envision himself as a lonely saviour of a world that was too busy even to crucify him. From 1901 to 1908 he wrote blank-verse poems and tragedies, all governed by this aim. He summarized his purpose in his prose Epilogue to *The Triumph of Mammon*: 'For half a century I have survived in a world entirely unfitted for me, and having known both the Heaven and the Hell thereof, and being without a revenue and an army and navy to compel the nations, I begin definitely in my Testaments and Tragedies to destroy this unfit world and make it over again in my own image: in my own image because that cannot be transcended; all men, crossing-sweepers or Ministers of State, endeavour to their utmost to make the world to their order; and those who identify their minds and imaginations with the Universe have unusual power and authority.'

*The Testaments* were all blank verse pieces. The first three were published, in rapid succession, by Grant Richards as paper-covered pamphlets, and the first two were offered at the attractive price of sixpence each: *The Testament of a Vivisector* (1901); *The Testament of a Man Forbid* (1901); *The Testament of an Empire-BUILDER* (1902). There followed as octavo volumes, *The Testament of a Prime Minister* (1904); *The Testament of John Davidson* (1908). During the same period he attempted to express his ideas through poetic drama, and hoped, though unsuccessfully, to gain recognition through the performance of his plays. In his preface to *The Theatocrat* (1905) he has explained his relationship with the theatre. Forbes Robertson had read the volumes of *Plays* which Davidson had written in Scotland, and in the mid-nineties he invited him to prepare a poetical version of François Coppée's *Pour la Couronne*. This Davidson achieved successfully and the play was performed at the Lyceum Theatre in 1896, with Forbes Robertson and Mrs. Patrick Campbell in the main parts. He continued with further adaptations and hoped through this connexion to have some of his own plays produced. Though this ambition was unfulfilled, he continued until the end to